

My Vampire 1101

My Vampire System Chapter 1101: The passive effect

Quinn was excited to find out what the crystals he had gathered could be turned into. Especially since he had managed to procure two extra crystals from the Graylash family. Before he had been worried he might have to deliberate over two Demi-god crystals, or one Demon tier depending on what they could be used for but now he could keep both.

With the new armour set, Quinn was hoping that at least one of the Demi-god tier crystals could be turned into a new pair of gauntlets for himself.

“As usual, I guess you could say I have some good news and some bad news for you to choose from. Although this time, I think you could say it’s all good news.” Alex said, even confusing himself with his own words.

“In the case of the Demi-god tier crystals you left me, they’re both suited to be made into gauntlets. If I use both, we won’t even need to use the energy from any other lesser grade crystals to power them. These will be the top end of the line of Demi-god tier crystals!” Alex explained with great detail and a smug smile on his face.

“Of course, I can’t tell you what their active skill will be, or what the equipment will be like until I actually make them.”

Quinn was certain whatever it would be as long as Alex made it, it would end up beneficial. Ever since his last pair of gauntlets had broken he had been using the Advanced tier gauntlets. As such, he was looking forward to using gauntlets made by such high tier crystals.

Quinn then pulled out the other two crystals from his system and handed them over to Alex.

“Please check these crystals as well and see if they could be useful to make something even better.” Quinn requested, yet after just a glance, Alex started to shake his head.

“Andrew has taught me a lot, so I can already tell you that these crystals don’t have the same quality as the ones I planned on using. I would have to check further to see what they could be made into, but I think it would be better to make the gauntlets out of just the Demi-god tier crystals.” Alex shared his professional opinion.

Placing them back into his system, that was a good enough answer for Quinn.

“Now, I’m sure you’re wondering about the Demon tier crystal, and unfortunately here is the bad news. I can’t give you much information, other than it can be turned into an accessory item. It’s up to you, whether you want me to make it into a specific form, or I could just trust in my forger instincts while hammering it down to craft the crystal.” Alex offered Quinn a choice.

Quinn didn’t know if Alex was being serious about the ‘forger instincts’, or if he was just saying to leave it up to him if he didn’t have anything in particular he was looking for.

‘An accessory item? It will add to my overall equipment I have on me without having to replace anything, so in a way that could be a good thing, and accessory items tend to have an active skill ninety percent of the time. If that’s the case, it could very well be a great active skill.’ Quinn pondered over his choice.

“In that case, I shall leave it up to you. I am fine with anything as long as it won’t be another mask since I already have one. Also, I was hoping you could use this.” Quinn pulled out a special type of crystal. It was shiny and had a silver colour, but it wasn’t clear like a regular beast crystal. It was the upgrade crystal Quinn had received from completing the quest.

“Remember when I asked you about crystals being able to upgrade equipment? Well that’s one of them. Feel free to study it as you wish.” Quinn explained.

Alex’s eyes nearly grew twice the size as he stared down at the crystal in amazement.

“I can’t believe something like this is actually real! How can you just hand me something so valuable like it’s nothing? Do you know how much this could change things? Where did you get this from?” Alex bombarded Quinn with a load of questions, not containing his excitement in the least.

Alas, Quinn had no actual answer to that question, because his system had just magically given it to him as a reward.

“I found it inside the Demon tier beast, alongside this strange seed, but it was the only one I could find.” Quinn lied, and put out the mask from his dimensional space onto the table.

“I wanted to save it, but I was thinking of upgrading the emperor tier mask I have. I remember what you said, and if I upgrade one of the set pieces of armour that you gave me, It could ruin the active set skill, so I thought it would be best to leave it as it is. At the moment, I need to improve everything I have as quickly as I can.” Quinn explained.

Alex started to nod frantically as he continued to hold the crystal in his hand, only now he was making sure not to hurt it, aware of its actual value.

“The gauntlets will be my priority, since they will be easier for me to make.” Alex informed Quinn about his next plan of action. “The crystals don’t take as long to form, however the Demon tier might take quite a bit of time. Fortunately, with Andrew helping me it will be quicker than if I had to do it on my own though.”

Quinn didn’t understand the whole process of making weapons, so he just decided to leave it to Alex. There was no need to tell the other he was in a hurry, or that they were running out of time, because Alex would always try his best no matter the circumstances.

A few days passed, in which there had been an update from Sam that the students had finally arrived on the Cursed ship and that a team of potential people had been chosen. It was up to Quinn what he wanted to do with those that were still on the planet he was currently on.

Those that had come with him had been quite the great help, and Quinn was starting to realise just how strong the members of the Cursed faction had grown, even without his help. He also wanted to know if leaving them on a planet next to the Dalki fleet was a good idea. In the first place, this was a Graylash family, and not a Cursed faction family.

Quinn was currently outside the shelter and he could see families peacefully walking around, even Ko and his wife, along with their daughter were walking with smiles on their faces.

'I guess I can't be that cruel, else I'll just be turning into the other leaders... Am I just going to forget about everyone on this planet because they are weak? Should I not help just because their allegiance isn't to the Cursed faction?. What if I was a child raised on this planet? Expecting help from those that could?'

Just then, Quinn received a message that the gauntlets were finally ready. Heading back into the forging room, Andrew and Alex both stood proud over the forging table, and they had the standard cloth out covering the items for the grand reveal.

"From the looks on your faces, I'm going to be quite pleased with this one, aren't I?" Quinn asked, feeling like a little kid about to open a present.

The two of them just continued to grin at Quinn, as he walked up to the table, and pulled the cloth down. Underneath he saw two masterpieces of gauntlets. Impressive in design.

They both were more simple than the other gauntlets Quinn had in the past. Usually they would be covered in scales and bumps indicating the beast they had been made from, but instead these two were cleanly flat, with a black rim around the edges. It looked like it would be a perfect fit for anyone who was wearing it.

What stood out was how they were both different in colour, one a light soft blue colour, the other dark purple in design. On the fingertips, small little tufts of fur could be seen floating.

Quinn picked them both up and immediately equipped them on, then using his Inspect skill he checked what the system had to say about them.

[You have obtained, the Demi-god tier gauntlet (Toximo Gauntlet)]

[Passive skill: Poisonous blood]

[Each strike has a small chance of poisoning your enemies.

Once poisoned the victim's speed will decrease, they will lose health gradually, suffer from delusions, blurry vision and more.]

[– Warning -]

[With each strike there is a small chance that the wearer will also get poisoned]

[Passive skill: Immune to all poisons]

[-Warning removed-]

There were quite a few things to take in, but Quinn could see that the first passive effect seemed to be quite a strong one on the gauntlets. However, he was worried that the system didn't give him a percentage of how likely it actually was to poison his enemies. In a way it wasn't something he could really do.

On the plus side, it seemed like the passive effect of the gauntlets that would poison the user had been removed due to the passive skill he had earned from defeating the moth. IN a way, it was an item that only he could use.

As for the stats, Quinn first wanted to see what the active skill of his other gauntlet was from. He assumed that this gauntlet was created using the crystal of the Poison moth he had fought, so he wondered what he would get from the other crystal.

Using his Inspect skill he discovered that it did indeed have an active skill, he just couldn't believe how effective it was.

My Vampire System Chapter 1102: Two active skills in one

The Gauntlets were a strange item that would come as a set. Which meant to get the full effect of the stats from them, one would have to wear both at the same time. Otherwise the stats would be halved.

Usually, several crystals would be used to make a set of gauntlets, which all had the same attribute. The good news was, according to Alex the Demi-god tier crystals were enough to make the gauntlets, having obtained two of them. At the same time they were similar and different which was why the colours were different as well.

So it was a rare thing what Quinn was holding onto right now, two gauntlets that worked together, yet somehow they had two complexly different active skills.

[You have obtained, the Demi-god tier gauntlet (Drainimo Gauntlet)]

[Active skill: Energy sap]

[When this skill is activated, as long as the gauntlet touches an entity containing energy, that energy will be drained and added to the wearer. Alternatively this energy can be used to re-energize the wearer's stamina.]

'An energy drain and it can restore stamina?' Quinn thought as he read the effects. He remembered what Sil had told him about the Moth beast they had defeated, how it had caused everybody who touched its fur to fall asleep. Seeing the active ability that must have stemmed from it, it appeared the Moth had actually been draining their energy.

'If I can stay close to my opponents, doesn't this mean I can keep on fighting, while weakening them at the same time? With these two active skills, I will be able to improve myself drastically! Although I would have to hold on to them, so it's not as effective as the beast itself.'

His stamina seemed to be closely related to using his Qi powers, which had often been a problem when he had ended up using it. He would have to test it out, but if Quinn's hypothesis was correct, the gauntlets might allow him to also restore the Qi during a fight.

However, there seemed to be one clear downside the Demi-god tier gauntlets had compared to the Advanced ones. The latter's active skill allowed Quinn to infuse his Qi to make the active skill even stronger, whereas it didn't seem like adding Qi to them changed anything.

The chance that the poison would be triggered might increase, but it was seemingly impossible to actually test it since he didn't even know the actual percentage chance. Adding Qi to the active skill when it was supposed to be a way for him to recharge it, also seemed counter productive.

However, overall he couldn't complain about them. On top of everything, the stats they granted him were nothing to scoff at.

[+50 Strength]

[+5 Agility]

[+5 Stamina]

He was surprised about the power boost, seeing as neither ability had anything to do with Strength. Quinn already had 70 points in Strength, and with the gauntlets alone that would bring it up to 120.

'If all Demi-god tier equipment gives their user this much of a boost in stats, then it's no surprise how Hilston, who is already plenty strong, can be a match for nearly anyone.' Quinn was starting to understand why Hilston was called the world's strongest human, although there had still been one person who had managed to defeat him... and Quinn now needed to be even stronger than that.

"It looks like you are happy with the job the two of us did. These might be the most powerful gauntlets in existence." Alex boasted. "After all, there aren't too many people that choose to fight with their fists or have it as their weapon but you are certainly unique. It's a bit of a shame that it doesn't match your armour set though. If you want, I could certainly dye them, make both gauntlets have the same colour as well."

Quinn looked at them, one had a dark purple colour, while the other side was a soft blue almost white. In a way the gauntlets were the same yet so different at the same time, and working together reminded him of himself.

“There’s no need, I happen to like how they are. What about the other stuff?” Quinn asked, seeing there wasn’t anything left on the table.

“Unfortunately, the other Demon tier crystal will take some more time due to the uniqueness of it. However, I can promise you that you can look forward to the weapons I will make. You’re free to wait, but I thought you had plans.”

It was true, he was sure that if Quinn didn’t hurry that maybe Eno would rally up the crew somehow and head out without him.

“You’re right, carry on working on the mask upgrade and the Demon tier weapon. Send me a message as soon as they’re ready. Make sure to keep your Shadow skill active! That way I can hop to you to collect the equipment once it’s ready.” Quinn suggested.

“Wait, so you want me to stay here and carry on forging, I don’t mind but..”

“I think it will be for the best.” Andrew interpreted. “I have been informed that there will soon be news that will be passed on to everyone, and it might shake the world a little. So these people need some order.”

Hearing this, Quinn wondered if Andrew already knew about the announcement that Oscar would soon release, about the Vs that were amongst all of the factions. As someone who had been tasked with creating the Demon tier he had to be a VVIP.

“Just for now.” Quinn replied. “I know it might not be safe, but I have a feeling that the Cursed ship might be moving more often soon as well. I’ll be asking for Wevil and Linda to stay behind, just in case anything happens here. Make sure the people can relax for a while, I think they deserve it after what they have been through.”

Since there was nothing else for Quinn to do aside from waiting, he rounded up the rest in preparation for leaving. Ko the leader of the orbus faction could see this, and just before Quinn left the faction he had called out to him.

“Quinn, wait.” Ko said. “I still haven’t been able to thank you. When you came here I was just stressed about everything that was going on. My family had gone missing and more people were disappearing. I thought I would never see them again.

“If you want, you can hit me. Hit me for everything I said.” Ko then closed his eyes bracing himself ready to get hit.

“If I did hit you, you might go flying out of this whole Shelter.” Quinn joked but was very serious at the same time. “Ko, if anything your frustration was due to you not being able to help the people around you and those that had gone missing, That wasn’t a bad thing in the end. It’s better than the people who choose to ignore it. Like those who were at the top. I hope you continue to stay this way.”

Quinn headed off, as he went to return to the ship, but Ko couldn’t help but get a few last words in.

“Quinn I will make sure everyone knows what type of person you and the Cursed faction really are. I won’t let anyone say a bad word about you!”

— — —

As the others traveled through space, on the Cursed ship itself in one of the training rooms. There was drastic huffing and panting coming from a small person. He could barely stand and held himself up with his Dalki hand facing the ground.

“Come on!” Brock shouted. “This is the last day the two of us will be training together. Do you really think if you were to run into the Blade twins again that you could beat them? Heck, even slowing them down will be a miracle unless you get stronger!”

After a few minutes and having banged to catch his breath, Logan raised his head and his eyes were glowing green. Around him, there were several pieces of scrap devices and his body was cut all over in different places.

“You have a unique soul weapon, one which is undoubtedly strong! However, you need to learn how to use it better! For most their soul weapon is their last resort in a fight, but for you this will be your constant weapon! Now come, attack me again!” Rock demanded.

Pushing himself off the ground with his large Dalki hand, Logan flew a few meters into the air, and let out a scream. His eyes grew even more fierce.

“I won’t drag the others down!!!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1103: All our strength

When Quinn and the others finally arrived back on the Cursed ship, all of them shared a sense of returning to somewhere they belonged. It was a bit strange to call a ship that constantly moved through space and could therefore be anywhere at any time ‘home’, but they all felt this way.

They knew that here none of them would be judged for what they had done in the past, they didn’t have to watch what they had to say, and could mostly do as they wished. Everyone knew that with the situation with the Dalki there was a lot to be done, but it didn’t hurt to take a breather or two for a second.

The people around the base greeted Quinn as usual, respectful, with many congratulating him on saving the Graylash family and acquiring the Demon tier crystal. The atmosphere was still light, so it seemed that Sam had yet to inform what most of the Cursed group were. He was sure that once the truth was out, the treatment wouldn’t be exactly the same.

He asked around whether Leo and Erin had come back, but it appeared that they were still dealing with their own troubles.

“Hey Quinn, can you show me what Alex created for you?” Nate requested as he approached the Cursed faction leader. “Ever since I’ve heard the news that you guys managed to defeat a Demon tier beast I’ve been waiting for you to come back and show your new toy!”

Whenever Quinn was walking around the base, he would put all of his beast gear away, only equipping it when needed. It was the same for all those with the shadow ability.

“Believe me, I would love to, but it’s not ready yet. Alex is still busy making it.” Quinn answered, not bothering to tell Nate about the new gauntlets he had.

“This sucks.” Nate complained out loud. “I get why you want me to train the people here, but I’ve already taught them as much as I could about hand to hand combat. Initially, it was quite enjoyable watching them learn it quickly and improve themselves, but to carry on and improve even more just takes time. They need experience, and fighting against each other can only get them so far.”

“What I’m trying to say is, Quinn, I’m bored,” Nate openly complained.

Quinn felt bad, Nate was one of the strongest people in his team, but he had felt that the Demon tier beast would have been too dangerous to take everyone. In many ways, he thought where they were going to go next was also a place only for those who had already proven themselves capable

There was also the issue that they needed to leave behind a strong crew on the Cursed ship, just in case they got attacked. At the same time if he would avoid taking new people with him, then they would really stagnate and would be unable to fight the Dalki when they arrived in full force.

At the moment, there were only small battles, but everyone could feel that there would be a full scale war soon. Both sides were just testing the grounds figuring out each other’s strength.

“Maybe there is something I can show you before I leave this time.” Quinn suggested. “I’m sure it won’t bore you anytime soon and once you get the hang of it perhaps you could show it to the others as well.”

Quinn then pressed his hand on the other’s chest. In the past Quinn had been afraid of doing this, due to him accidentally turning others. The easiest way to show people Qi, was by making their bodies feel it moving around.

Vampires seemed not to have this Qi force on their own, yet those that had been turned did, so someone like Nate should be able to learn it. Nate closed his eyes to concentrate on the feeling, and Quinn started to swirl around the energy in his body.

“Try to follow along with me, focus on the energy and try to push and move it yourself.” Quinn instructed.

It didn't take long to feel it. He wasn't very bright, but when it came to fighting instincts, something like Qi was perfect for him, and he could feel it almost instantly.

Then, Quinn's hands were no longer touching his body.

"What was that?" Nate asked.

"I think you already got a feeling on how to use it yourself. Perhaps your years of studying martial arts have already allowed you to experience it, you just didn't know the name for it. That was Qi. Leo was the one to teach me. Just remember this feeling and practice it. Also, try to come up with a way of teaching others without doing what I just did."

"Otherwise, there is the risk that you might accidentally turn them." Quinn said.

At first, Nate thought it was a joke but realised that Quinn was completely serious when he said those last words. Quinn had wanted to teach those on board Qi for a long time, but the only way he had learnt it, was through feeling the process through his body, and that was the only way he had taught it to the other students at school as well.

The thing was, Quinn didn't know of a way to teach the others, and he didn't have the time to go around touching everyone.

'Nate, hopefully you will become a better teacher than I.' Quinn thought.

Suddenly, a meeting had been called as all of the cursed leaders were called to head to the command room.

When Quinn arrived along with Nate, he could see that most were already there, thankfully that included Eno as well, but his calm face from before looked to be more serious as he displayed a constant frown and his arms were folded.

Next, Sil entered with Borden on his shoulders into the room, and his walking was fast paced with excitement, meaning he had an idea of what this whole meeting was exactly about. As for the last ones to enter, they were Logan and Brock. It was strange to see the two of them together.

Quinn didn't even know when they had grown close and the strangest thing was actually the fact that Logan had wounds all over his body.

'What happened to him, did one of his inventions backfire or something? When was the last time I have seen him hurt this badly? Why didn' he go see a doctor?' Quinn wondered.

"Is the meeting going to start?" Dennis asked.

"Soon." Sam replied. "There is still one more person that needs to be here."

As the doors opened one more person walked in on his own, Shiro. He looked frightened as everyone stared at him, but when he saw Quinn, he tried to pretend to be confident and started walking over.

"It's good to see you again, and I have to thank you for accepting my request." Quinn greeted him.

Shiro looked over at Sil, and then back at Quinn. Before he had been a power hungry person, but now he had a debt to pay. These people had saved his life multiple times, and he just wanted to be by their side and help them.

The lives of Shiro and the others had changed at school after meeting Quinn, and he knew that as long as he helped the Cursed faction, everyone's lives would also change for the better.

"Okay, it's time that we talk about Blade Island." Sam announced.

Somewhere a great distance away, in the beast solar system, a man stood in a large hall. His large frame was covered in diamond like armour from head to toe as well as a helmet with slits to allow him to see through it.

The man turned around and looked at the large hall behind him. Inside there were around a hundred people. Every single one of them attached to a metal rod sticking out of the ground, chained up.

“We have prepared for long enough. I never thought that I would meet someone beyond me, but that is why we must continue on. No matter what we must get Sil back, and this time I will use the power of all the chained here!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1104: Changing the future

On the planet that never saw sunlight, preparations were being made. Ever since learning that Arthur would be coming for him eventually, Bryce had been more focused and determined than ever before.

Right now he was in the throne room while Kazz stood by his side.

‘I did everything I could to finally obtain the King’s seat. Others might just enjoy having fulfilled their grand ambition, grow lazy, while letting things play out until it would be time for their final rest, but how can I?’ Bryce thought as he clenched his fist and the veins on his hand showed themselves.

‘How can I give up, when the Punisher, that bastard responsible for killing my family, is still out there? Fortunately, I won’t have to go out and find him, now that I know that he will be coming for me!’

Kazz couldn’t hear what her father was thinking, she could only see him act restless, making her worry for him. However, over the years she had grown somewhat used to it. She was aware that around a certain time of year Bryce would act like that. At some point he would proceed to enter the room where the dreaded paintings were and come out more determined.

She was unsure whether he was going there to remind himself what he had achieved so far, or if there was a deeper meaning behind it. Whatever the case, what used to seldom occur, had become far more frequent in recent times.

Today was another such day and she no longer knew what was the right thing to do.

“Don’t you think it will be beautiful?” Bryce asked as he started to walk forward. He suddenly stopped as the shadow of an item went over his face. “When Arthur comes back to exact his punishment, his very own powers will be used against him.”

Stroking his hand over the wall in front of him, he could feel how smooth it felt. With how perfect it was, aside from a few missing pieces here and there, it was hard to believe that the wall used to be full of cracks.

“That kid must have taken part of the wall with him.” Tempus said, moving from behind the wall. “Using my ability the whole thing should have returned to what it once was, but it doesn’t seem to all be here.”

Kazz didn’t say anything. She was one of the people who had gone in with Quinn, but she had never expected her father to raid the Punisher’s castle after his disappearance. When they found the wall, Kazz had never seen a creeper smile on her father’s face before.

“Don’t worry, it seems we have been able to decipher enough information from this to figure out a few things, bring them in, Kazz.” Bryce ordered, and she quickly left the room.

A few moments later, she returned with three vampires, all of them looked tired, exhausted. Sweating nervously, they were afraid of what was going to happen to them.

“Your Majesty, I think you will be quite pleased with our results, today will be the day that we are able to show you something.” One of the vampires said as he remained on the floor with his head bowed down.

“Are you sure this is a good thing, your Majesty?” Tempus questioned. “If they learn the ability, it also means that Arthur will be able to use them in some way as well.”

“Show me what you have learnt.” Bryce ordered, ignoring Tempus’ warning.

The three stood up, and stayed in position for a short while. As they closed their eyes, soon the shadow underneath their feet started to move, and then it could be seen hovering over their back. Finally, weeks after discovering the tablet, it looked like they had learnt how to use the Shadow ability.

The tablet that had been left in the fourteenth castle, which showed one how to learn and use the Shadow ability, had been moved to the King's castle, and now Bryce had his first set of shadow users.

However, even though Tempus had agreed to help the king, he was unsure what the other was thinking. Why would he be creating his own shadow users? One of the main abilities of the Punishers were that they were able to travel to each other with their shadow as they wished,

He could only see this causing more trouble than what it was worth... that was until he saw the next set of actions from the King. He walked up to the three of them, and then placed both hands on the shoulder of the vampire centred in the middle.

"You three have done an excellent job, the vampire race will be proud of you, and your names shall be forever remembered." Bryce said, as a sudden blood spike appeared from Bryce's stomach piercing the other vampire's stomach.

At the same time, from his forearms two more blood spikes had come out, killing the other two vampires as well.

When Bryce let go of the one in the centre, he fell to the floor and a shadowy mist started to spring from their bodies.

"Vampires have existed for a long time, but we did not always have abilities." Bryce narrated as he carefully watched the smoke make its way towards him. He then pulled out a clear transparent crystal and the mist started to enter into the crystal. Soon the clear colour started to fill up.

"The world is a complicated thing, and even we don't know all of its secrets." Bryce continued. "But it looks like the gods are on my side, and wish for me to achieve my goal. Kazz, bring me more people. We must gather and teach the shadow ability to as many people as possible."

However, even though her father had ordered it, she was frozen in fear. Was that her father's plan? Raise more shadow users, only to then kill more of his people? Sacrifice the lives of his own vampires just to store some strange shadow in a crystal?

She had seen him go too far at times but this was far beyond anything before.

'God's on your side, you say?' Tempus wondered.

After Bryce had learned that Arthur was coming, he had initially been struck with a bit of fear. Although he had the Absolute blood control from the book passed on by kings, whenever he thought back to the execution platform, and what Arthur had done, anger and fear were the two emotions that entered him at the time.

While stuck in his throne room, trying to clear his head, he had received a certain surprise visitor, one that smelt like a human, a strange thing in the Vampire World to say the least. Being able to make it to him without being stopped, was the best evidence that the girl was not normal.

"I won't waste your time by introducing myself, just know that I have come to help you." The girl had told him cryptically. "There is great trouble in your future and without help you will only fail. As such I have brought you a gift. The origins of the shadow will originally wish to return to the place where it came from."

The girl had pulled out the clear crystal, and placed it on the ground. In the few seconds Bryce's gaze had been on the crystal, she had already disappeared, leaving the Vampire King with an empty crystal and a ton of unanswered questions.

For a day or two, he had tried to ignore this mysterious meeting, but eventually the lack of any solution, as well as curiosity, got the better of him and he decided to verify how powerful the crystal was. Just from them using the shadow powers there was no such reaction, the crystal was on Bryce at all times, but then a sound, as if something was calling to him told him what he needed to. The test with the shadow users and crystal wasn't over yet.

Not too far away, the very person that Bryce was prepping for was thinking about him as well. He was sitting on top of a large building with the night sky, although there was another man behind him.

“We are meeting here again, I guess you have finished with your preparations and It looks like you have made your choice. It’s time for you to move, isn’t it” The man told him.

“I still couldn’t find him, but he is definitely out there, but I can’t keep looking. Indeed, there is no better time. But shouldn’t you worry about your own side? It looks like to me things haven’t gone the way you thought they would. I told you that you would have troubles with them. You shouldn’t have underestimated them.” Arthur replied with a cheeky grin.

“I hate to admit it, but you’re right. Make sure to not repeat my mistake, I would hate to lose you. Who knows how strong they have gotten since we have been away.” The man cautioned Arthur.

“Strong? No, the way I see it, they have just gotten weaker...well, maybe not all of them.” Arthur corrected himself, as he stood up.

“Once everything is over, remember to keep your promise!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1105: Challenge for the seat

Arthur leaped off from the top of the tower and the next moment his body was covered in shadows.

‘I disagree Arthur, although it might not look like it, but things are going perfectly at the moment. My initial plan had never accounted for the fact that you may ever wake up, so thanks to your presence everything will proceed far more smoothly than I could have ever hoped for. Vincent, if only you were still here to see everything your uncle is about to achieve.”

The man behind Arthur was none other than Jim Eno, former leader of the tenth family, who not only disgraced himself, but also used his chance to redeem himself as a vampire knight to escape with the Dalki.

Left alone on top of the building, he started to smile to himself, before he broke out in laughter. His imagination had begun to run wild, dreaming about what the future would hold, but then anger struck him, and he punched through one of the wall's at the very top of the tower smashing it to pieces.

"The human's need to be gone, and then they will understand the mistake that they made. I just have to continue being patient, we still have plenty of time." Jim spoke to reassure himself.

Just as he was about to repair the tower, a large horn sounded throughout the entire place. Large speakers would echo it so it could be heard all over the ship like planet.

'They are at it again? It's truly amazing how quickly they have become a civilization with traditions of their own.' Jim thought. 'I should head on over and see for myself how powerful the newly evolved one is...'

The place most Dalki called home was a giant ship that had been repurposed to suit their needs. Just like its inhabitants it was constantly improving and had changed drastically once again. In the centre was an energy core that would power the large thing 'Ship' but it was large enough to be recognised as a small planet as well. It was something the humans had yet to see, always being on the defence.

By extracting the different lands from the beast planets that they had conquered, the Dalki had been able to create their own land. It made for different terrain throughout, but was nothing a Dalki couldn't handle.

On the outside, a large ring like tube made of what appeared to be a type of metal and extended tubes went directly through the land leading to the core, as well as to the large castle-like shape where the so-called Dalki leaders resided in.

Despite being called a 'castle', in actuality it was just a crude mountain top with a few towers built here and there. The Dalki didn't really care too much for architecture due to their beastly nature and had merely built the structures they had been told to. Most of the living areas had been made with the same materials that vampires had discovered to create. The black like hard substance that was equal to galthrium but harder to mold. The entire man made planet had mainly been created by two people, Jim Eno, and the Dalki known as Graham.

Standing outside the entrance to their castle, three Dalki could be seen walking out, all of them sharing looks of irritation. One was a female Dalki, with an extra long tail named Slicer, the other two were One Horn, and Graham.

"It appears another member of our race has evolved and wishes to join the table." Graham stated.

"Can't they at least stop obsessing over who is stronger at a time like this?!" One Horn openly grumbled.

"Oi, have you already forgotten who the idiot was who proposed the stupid rule that any of the leaders could be challenged at any point and time for their position?" Slicer criticized the former, as she wrapped her tail and rested it on top of her shoulder.

The three of them jumped up several meters into the air with their powerful legs, and each time they would land, they jumped again, covering great distance and moving fast, until eventually they landed in a deep giant crater away from their castle. It was in an empty red wasteland. It looked similar to an opening of a volcano with the way the edges were bent, yet it was on felt ground.

Once the three of them arrived, they could see that there was already another Dalki standing opposite them in the crater, and at the very edges up top, several Dalki had gathered to watch the spectacle that was about to occur.

The Dalki turned around proudly showing off the four spikes on his back.

"I have finally obtained my fourth spike! According to the rules, I have come to challenge one of you for the leader's position!" The Dalki announced, and the rest of the crowd watching above cheered as well.

The three Dalki leaders looked at each other to decide what was to happen next.

“It’s up to you two.” Graham shrugged his shoulders as he took a step back. “I have already made my stance clear about this entire thing being barbaric. I only agreed to it because it seems like the best method to cause the least amount of infighting as possible.”

“Dred is no longer with us, so he needs to be replaced, and Green Horn has returned to us barely alive, so it would be good to test him to see if he can replace one of their positions.”

“Fine, I’ll deal with him.” One Horn sighed, as he walked forward, but before he could take another step, a large tail blocked his path.

“Allow me to remind you that this is our home and I’m worried you will only destroy it even more. Have you forgotten who created this giant crater in the first place?” Slicer said as she walked forward.

As the Dalki saw who he was about to go up against, he wanted to make a complaint.

“Graham, I don’t mean to challenge you, where are the others?” The Dalki complained, but before Graham could reply, Slicer was already coming towards him.

The Dalki was forced to defend himself. He went to throw in a punch, but it completely missed Slicer, and the next thing he knew was that he felt a sharp pain on his back.

“Oh, what’s this? Didn’t you say you had four spikes on your back? Why can I only see three then?” Slicer asked, as she brought the other spike to her hand with her tail.

The crowd who had been cheering from above had started to disperse as soon as they saw who had come forward. They were already making their way back to return to what they had been doing before.

As the four spiked Dalki took a step again, Slicer jumped up in the air, doing a backflip, and her large tail went out ward hitting the Dalki from between his legs, all the way up to his head. The hard Dalki skin was unable to do anything as he was sliced in half by her tail.

“You were meant to keep him alive! How do you suppose we can fill in our rank if you test them like this?” Graham complained as he sighed about the loss of life.

“We don’t need such weaklings who can’t even touch me. Since they managed to defeat Dread, he would not have fared any better.” Slicer explained herself, as she walked off, displaying the five spikes on her back.

‘Even if he wasn’t as strong as Dred, that doesn’t mean he couldn’t have been useful in other ways. Everything we are doing is just for the sake of us being able to continue living, yet there you go killing him for nothing. Slicer, with Dalki like you around, it’s no wonder the humans wish to get rid of every single one of us.’ Graham thought bitterly.

“It seems like Slicer is tired of playing games, let’s send her out to make the next move.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1106: A detour

A banging headache was the first thing she felt, and then pain rushed through her body until it eventually disappeared. However, the thing that caused Erin to finally open her eyes was the smell of something burning, as the scent wafted into her nose.

All she could see was a brown ceiling wall with the light shining in from one direction. No, the ceiling was bumpy and the ground was hard. She tried to get up, but as soon as she moved she heard the sound of chains rattling by her side and she felt the heavy weight on both of her arms.

‘The chain is on both of my arms now?’ Erin wondered, as she looked to her left and right and could see that they had reached the top of her shoulders. Before she could only remember them being on one arm, and she wasn’t even sure how there were enough of the chains to wrap around both of them.

Looking ahead, she was happy to see the person who would be able to answer everything. Leo was sitting by a fire he had made, and was in the middle of roasting a few fish over it. That’s when she noticed the two of them appeared to be in a cave of all things with a nice lake seen in the distance.

“Looks like you’re finally awake. I thought you might be hungry as you’ve been asleep for a few days now.” Leo informed her. “No need to hold back, as you know I don’t really eat this type of thing. Oh and if you’re wondering about the chains, I had always carried around a spare with me just in case it got up to this point.”

Hearing Leo’s words, she was still confused about how they had gotten here or where exactly ‘here’ was. Her head was still hurting, but slowly images started to flash into her head.

She saw the four spiked Dalki, and herself getting hit. That was pretty much the last thing she could barely remember. At the time she hadn’t been in control anymore, but she had somehow retained the memories. Looking at them felt like she was seeing a doppelgänger act, but she knew that this had to have been her.

“I...I tried to hurt you.” Erin said, her voice croaking a little. These words were painful for her to say. Leo had always tried to help her, yet she had only gotten in his way and she could only blame her own weakness.

“No one has died, and as you can say I’m. There’s no need for you to shed a tear for me. You might have tried to hurt me, but ultimately you failed. Perhaps it means I didn’t train you hard enough.” Leo chided her playfully.

Erin’s body was fine, she didn’t experience any difficulties moving it. In fact, after a while she realised that she could move it now even better than before. That wasn’t all, she also noticed plenty of other things. The power in her body had increased, but at the same time they were being drained.

‘Did I hit a breakthrough, when I took off those chains? Or was it after I got hit by the Dalki?’ Erin started to wonder. The conclusion she eventually reached was that her body hadn’t simply improved but that she herself was slightly different. She had spent enough time with the vampires she had trained before to understand that she had undergone an evolution.

In the past she would have been happy about something like this, after all this was the fastest way to grow stronger, and she was sure that this evolution would allow her to do some things she might have been unable to before, but a fear had taken over her, as she thought about this, the words of another.

'That girl, she said that I would become 'chaos'.' Erin repeated in her head. 'If I keep getting stronger without learning how to control this power then the thing happened to Leo... what if I attack the others as well? What if it hadn't been Leo but Nate, Sam or even Layla with me?.'

These disastrous thoughts of hers were filling up in her head, spoiling her appetite to the point that she was unable to even eat the fish that had been cooked for her. Of course this didn't go unnoticed by Leo at all.

"Erin, without your intervention we would probably be dead by now. You saved me, that stranger and countless others. You were fast, skilled and calm during the first half of the fight."

"At the time, your body must have been urging you to go after me, but instead you focused on the Dalki and did great. I believe you will be able to control the powers inside of you. Back then you were just unlucky enough to become unconscious from your injury, allowing your instincts to take over." Leo explained. "The person who attacked me wasn't the real Erin."

She appreciated what Leo was trying to do, but for some reason it just made her feel even more guilty. "What if it gets worse? We know that if a vampire consumes too much blood they can become one of those monstrous Bloodsuckers. Maybe I'm the same. What happens when it isn't enough?!" Erin questioned Leo as she stood up. Surprisingly, she felt the chains falling off her as well.

"What are you doing?!" Erin couldn't believe that Leo would release them like this.

"Can you feel it? The only way to fight your fear is to face it head on! You can't allow it to take over you. Do you think I'm frightened of you?! You are far too young to be worrying about me!" Leo shouted back and soon Erin swung her blade towards him and a large splash of yellow energy came out.

Jumping out of the cave they were in, Leo struck the slash with his own power, deflecting it into the air, and making it so it hit nothing.

Erin was huffing and panting, and she slowly walked out. With his ability, he could see the struggle she was facing, this strange energy that wanted to constantly lash out at him, while the girl on the inside was trying to suppress it.

'It's strange... this isn't a lust for blood like other vampires have, and when I attempted to give her vampire blood it did nothing for her. Is it a lust to kill?' Leo worried about that possibility. 'The best course of action seems to be to allow her to slowly adjust herself to this feeling, so she learns how to control the urge.'

'The way she currently is, it's too dangerous to bring her back on the Cursed ship. How can I help her control it without allowing her to kill enough vampires until she's satisfied?' Leo thought.

He kept his distance from her as he waited and then when the energy seemed to get too much, and her consciousness seemed to be slipping, he immediately dashed in, and ran straight past her, picking up the chains, and wrapping it around both of her arms again.

Soon, the power within her was dwindling down again, and Leo was left with an exhausted Erin. "You did well, have a rest and I will decide what to do."

Back in the cave, Leo finally came to a tough decision of what they needed to do, but he still wasn't sure if it was the right thing or not.

'There are plenty of bad people in the world, and there are also bad vampires that have attempted to kill us. Perhaps, the only thing we can do is head back to that place...where you will be surrounded by them. Quinn, I wish I could help you, but I fear if I don't do something about Erin now, that she will be a far bigger problem in the future.' Leo pondered over whether or not he should inform Quinn about his choice.

He played with a Demi-god tier crystal that was in his hand, gifted to him by a certain someone. it looked like it had been slipped in and given to him at some point.

'My preparations for meeting you master will have to be put on hold, first, some preparations are in order.'

My Vampire System Chapter 1107: A stronger Qi inside

In the command centre of the Cursed ship, all the leaders of the Cursed faction were present. Sam had just stated that he would be talking about what the Cursed group would be doing next, their journey to Blade Island.

“I’m going to explain everything from the beginning, just so everyone is clear why we are doing what we are doing and so we are all on the same wavelength.” Sam stated. “After all, as leaders of the Cursed faction it is important for all of us to know what’s happening just in case we need to support each other, and so none of us feel like the others are slacking in their areas.”

“At the same time we have a new guest that also needs to be briefed on everything.” Sam explained looking towards Shiro with a smile. He had been told a few small details, but through messages alone it was hard for him to understand everything that was happening.

“Blade Island is owned by the Blade family. For those who aren’t aware, the Blade family is a strong family that has been controlling the Big Four families from behind the scenes for years. Each one of them has the ability to copy other abilities, and if you haven’t guessed by now, Sil is also a member of that family.”

Some of this was quite shocking for the others to learn, that there really was a family that was stronger than the Big Four. How had they managed to keep it a secret for so long? However, some things were also starting to make sense to them now. The way people acted once they had learned of Sil’s power and discovered his last name.

“As you probably have guessed since Sil is with us, they don’t particularly get along, and the Blades aren’t the nicest of people. They have abused their strength, and for whatever reason they didn’t even help in the first Dalki war.”

“The main person to watch out for is Hilton Blade, the leader of the Blade family. Thankfully, we have learnt from Brock that they are no longer on the island. This means we should be able to complete two of our objectives easier than originally planned.” Sam pointed to Shiro, signalling him to stand up. He shot up straight away, nervous as all the eyes were on him.

Usually, when one would join a large faction they would do simple tasks and work their way up, but for Shiro’ first mission, he had practically been thrown into what looked like a very important mission.

“The first part of our task is to head to the giant stone tablet where Eno will see if the tablet contains the ability we are looking for and pass it onto Shiro as agreed.” There was a slight pause as Sam was waiting for Eno to raise a complaint, yet the old man did no such thing. After all, this was one of the options Eno himself had presented.

“With that, there is a second part of the task, and that is to use Sil and his ability to try and tame the Demon tier beast and move it.”

Hearing those words, Shiro spun his head around and looked at Sam, his whole body shaking.

“Di- Di- Did you just say- say a Demon tier beast?!” Shiro stuttered and felt like he was about to collapse. He was someone who had no such ability, and could barely fight Intermediate beasts, and now he was meant to confront a Demon tier beast.

“I have to add that moving the Demon tier beast may not be an easy task.” Brock interjected. “If Sil’s ability is enough then perhaps there will be no need for us to do anything. However, if it rejects or wishes to fight, then we will have no other choice but to weaken it for Sil’s ability to work.”

“Although Hilston was able to control the beast, he has what he calls the ‘Chained’ with him, and it appears he has evacuated them all off the island. Most of the high level ability users who are here, Sil can not copy their ability from. It would be great if we could call Oscar or Owen for Sil to touch, but they are doing their own thing, and if possible we would like to refrain from letting them know where the Demon tier beast is.”

This was something Quinn hadn’t thought of, it meant that they would need to take six humans along with them, for Sil to copy their abilities from, adding more risk to the mission.

“As long as I can place them in the Shadow lock, they should be fine, and if the Blades aren’t there the only thing we have to worry about is the Demon tier beast. Well I say ‘only’, but that’s still a big thing to worry about.” Quinn said.

“Which moves us on to the next point, for who you wish to bring along, I believe that Nate is already busy teaching the others. I have sent a message to Helen, and asked her to come along since we will need her to give Sil a boost while leaving her two sisters in charge.” Sam said.

“Is there anyone who wants to come?” Quinn asked, looking for a show of hands, but nearly everyone had raised their hand. As usual most of the Cursed leaders were fearless, and Shiro looked at this just through one thing.

‘These people are so awesome!’

Knowing what they were about to go into, many would have backed out, but for some reason, all this group trusted and relied on each other. This was what Shiro was looking for, and he didn’t even know it before. In the past all he had cared about was power, but why did he need that power in the first place?

Brock, Eno, Sil and Shiro were already a given since they had to come. When Quinn looked around the room, he was trying to think of who would be suitable for the task. Last time the group he had brought along with him had been a great help.

“The names I say will be coming along with us.” Quinn said after making a decision. “Richard, Brock, Sil, Shiro, Fex, Logan and Borden. Helen will be joining us as well.” Quinn said as his final choices.

“Peter, I know you are strong but that’s why I want you to remain behind and continue to look after the Blade kids. I’m worried that while we don’t know where the Blade members are they might come out and attack us at any point and time.” Quinn explained.

Of course, Peter wasn’t delighted hearing he wasn’t allowed to come along, but he couldn’t exactly go against Quinn’s orders.

When facing a Demon tier beast, large forces were never a good idea, least of all with this type of Demon tier beast. Quinn was worried that a similar situation that had happened to Owen could happen to the Cursed faction as well. Sam was right, even with his ability to travel to their side instantly, now situations were starting to arise where he had to be in two places at once, and that was impossible. He had to rely on the people around him.

“Please remember that we have to wait for one more.” Eno finally spoke. “She has still yet to arrive, but I assure you she is on her way. Aren’t you also waiting for more candidates to come?”

Quinn had almost forgotten about it, but to use Sil’s ability they would need Mona.

'With Mona coming, then that's one last person that we need to find for Sil. I chose Logan because he's a high level ability user, I don't plan to use him much for the fighting side of things. With Helen as well, that's three abilities that Sil can copy from.'

"Sam, will try to find three more members with a high level ability for Sil to copy, in the meantime we will wait for Mona and Helen to arrive. With this the meeting is over." Quinn announced and everyone was ready to get up to head their separate ways.

Just as Quinn was about to leave the meeting room though, he felt someone strongly grab his hand and yanked him away.

"What are you doing, why didn't you pick me?!" Layla asked him directly, the anger in her voice apparent. "It's one thing for you to avoid me ever since, but now you don't even consider me for such an important mission?"

It was then that Quinn noticed that touching each other didn't give them the headaches that they had before. Perhaps it was something to do with the feelings he had felt at the time. Which made him wonder internally what his feelings were for Layla if they weren't constantly going off, or maybe he just had too much on his mind at the moment.

"Layla, this is a Demon tier beast, and the Blade Island. You weren't there last time, but I was nearly killed. We all almost died." Quinn stressed the seriousness of the situation.

"But it was okay to take me to hunt with you for the other Demon tier? You're not making any sense right now. Why are they so intent on avoiding me?" Layla pressed him for an answer. At the moment, she was filled with anger. She hadn't worked this hard, come this far, just to be chucked to the side, and forgotten about.

While feeling her hand on him, Quinn noticed that her grip was incredibly strong, stronger than usual. Layla's vampire subclass shouldn't grant her extreme strength... not unless she had evolved into her second form, so what was powering her at this moment?

"Do you mind if I take a look at you?" Quinn asked and Layla started to blush. She wanted to let go, but Quinn held her hand tightly and closed his eyes.

'What is this in her body? How does she have such a strong Qi? It seems to be even bigger than mine.'

According to Layla she had never learned how to use Qi from Pure, she had never reached the ranks to be taught it in the first place. There was only one explanation how she could have such a large Qi capacity then.

'I knew that her mother had passed Layla her Qi, but I was sure that it would fade away once she healed and time went on, but this is still as strong as ever! If Layla actually learned to use Qi, she could be as strong as her mother, perhaps even stronger due to her vampire powers.' Quinn concluded as he smiled.

"Alright Layla, I will permit you to accompany us, but only if you manage to learn something before it's time for us to leave." Quinn offered.

My Vampire System Chapter 1108: Two heads collide

Quinn wasn't a master of Qi, nor did he understand all the things it could do. He was even unaware of how Lucy, Layla's mother, had been able to give up her own life to heal Layla at that time. He had been sure that all the effects on Layla would only be temporary.

However, since it hadn't disappeared after all this time, it should be safe to assume that it would stay with Layla. Additionally, since she had never trained her own Qi apart from what little she had done with Leo, there should be room for her to improve. From what Quinn had heard, Leo had said that she was a slow learner.

Even with him using all his knowledge, it would have taken her half a year to show any type of results. Which was why Quinn had set up a test, a test for her to fail.

Right now, checking her, it looked like the Qi vessel was ready to burst at any second.

With this new knowledge, and knowing how frustrated Layla would be if left behind, Quinn stipulated this condition to allow her to accompany them to Blade Island.

She was to go find Nate, and learn how to use Qi with him. To see if maybe a second teacher would fare any better. If before it was time to leave, she could learn how to use Qi to a degree where it would be useful and strengthen her attacks to a certain level, then she should be able to take care of herself on the island.

'I didn't take you for such a cruel person.' Vincent commented, after Quinn had presented Layla with a new goal. She had immediately accepted it and before he could ever say anything she had rushed off to Nate.

'How is this cruel, if I simply don't wish for her to get hurt? I might be unsure what exactly I feel for her, but there is one thing that's crystal clear. I don't want to lose her.' Quinn defended his actions. 'I know Qi can take a long time for some people to learn, but there's still a chance and she has tried before. With her mother's power inside her, it might even cause us to have another Cursed monster on our team. We will just have to see how she does.'

Left alone, Quinn decided to head off and look for Sil. He was wondering what state of mind he was currently in. He had seemed mostly fine during the Demon tier hunting expedition, but with them soon returning to his birth place it would be normal for him to be nervous or feel all sorts of emotions.

Quinn headed to the school area on the Cursed ship, a frequent place for Sil to relax at, due to him getting along with the other kids from Blade Island. Before he turned around the corner, Quinn happened to overhear a conversation.

"I just want to say... thank you, Shiro." Sil said. "That ability will help me bring back my friends."

"Please, you don't have to be like this, Sil." Shiro replied, sounding nervous like he didn't know how to react. "I'm just happy to help anyway I can. You know the second they said it was to help you out, I agreed in a heartbeat."

"You saved me back then. If I had gone too far....I don't know what would have happened to me, but your words, everything you said and everything you did has made me who I am now. So no matter what,

I will do everything in my power to help you get your friends back! Afterwards... Maybe I can also become friends with them.”

Hearing this, gave Quinn a bit of peace. Sil seemed to be as calm as ever and even thanked Shiro first. Something that Quinn had never expected from a child like Sil. It seemed that knowing that Vorden and Raten were coming back would please him, although this was only the first step.

Even if Shiro did get the ability, they still needed bodies for the two of them, and Quinn didn't want to use the so-called clones that Eno would create. That would be a temporary fix to the whole solution, if anything. They needed Shiro to learn the ability so they could rely on Eno less, but it was impossible to completely not rely on him.

From the sounds of it, Shiro and Sil were about to take a tour of the ship and with Quinn's worries settled, he could go off to do his own thing. As he walked around the ship, he heard the announcement that the docking bay for the spaceships was opening up.

“Someone arrived?”

Knowing this, he thought it would be best for him to also make his way and meet them there, and along the way, he bumped into Brock and Eno.

“Quinn, I have to say so far things have been going very smoothly for you, but that's because it seems that Jim and the Dalki are completely unaware of you.” Eno said as they continued to walk.

“At the moment, the Cursed faction is just another group that Jim has to worry about, but once he learns the truth of your identity and the reaction you have to all of us, I'm sure you will become a bigger target than anyone else. I just hope you're ready for that.”

However, Quinn didn't feel the need for it to be mentioned, he was already preparing for the Dalki or Jim to come after him at any second. Especially since it seemed like there was a chance that they already knew about Blade Island.

When they arrived at the docking bay, Quinn could see that the guests had already exited from their ship, and he could smell it instantly as they walked of, four vampires were guarding a female in the centre, who was descend in dark clothing and had a large pointy hat on top of her head. It was Mona.

'So there are vampires working for Richard, after all... but just how many people does he have under him?' Quinn wondered.

"Have you forgotten that I told you that I had eyes and ears in all sorts of different places? You didn't think all of my work was just done by me and Brock. However, don't worry, nearly all of them are just clones of myself, with the transformation ability. Allowing them to change their appearance at will."

"It would be creepy if I just saw myself this whole time."

Quinn understood the logic behind that, but if 'nearly' all the vampires that worked for Richard were clones, who was Brock?

"Who is, Brock?" Quinn asked, not being shy about the question.

"Oh I thought you would never ask, Brock here is an ex Royal Knight. He was my Royal knight during my time of becoming king, and he had helped me a great deal throughout the times. Of course , he used to have a different ability but I changed it to help us more with our situation."

"Changed it? Like with Truedream's ability." Quinn asked, since Richard appeared to be in a sharing mood.

"Not quite, as you know we have already talked about the tablet more than once. It is a special thing, more so than you know, and it can do amazing things." Eno explained, as they continued to walk forward.

Quinn already knew that the tablet was indeed special. He had read all about it in Arthur's journal who had been obsessed about it at one point. That the probability that all the abilities that were currently in existence had originated from there.

“Finally, it looks like I’m out of that place. I never thought you would let me leave.” Mona said when she looked at Richard and Brock, then she finally laid her eyes on Quinn.

“I’m surprised you are involved in all of this.” Mona said.

He was unsure how much exactly Mona knew, did she know Richard Eno and the others were vampires, what they had planned to do, or was there something else. Through a brief conversation while he was escorting her on her way to Sam, he found out that Mona had been brought up to speed.

She didn’t know anything about vampires yet, just that the man who had saved her from Hilston, was Richard Eno, the great scientist, which was why she didn’t fear for her life and felt indebted towards him.

When she asked about his relationship to Richard Eno, Quinn claimed that he was his grandfather, the only reasonable thing he could say, and she was starting to get a better picture of everything. The details of what they were about to do, and why they needed to do so were also shared with Mona, and once this was all done, she would stay by Richard’s side, at least until the war was over and done with.

“That damn Hilston, that kid has one crazy grandfather!” Mona said, referring to Sil. “I can’t believe what he did, but it sounds like he at least got some sort of payback from you guys. I just hope we don’t run into him again.”

Quinn also hoped the same, but he knew that they would have to face him eventually. The best thing to hope for was that it wouldn’t happen right now. It felt silly to worry about a human, of all things when they were in the middle of a war with the Dalki.

With Mona now here, there was only one person left that they needed to wait for and that was Helen, which meant they didn’t have a lot of time before they were to head off. A short while later Helen finally arrived.

Once again, Quinn had gone to greet Helen as she had gotten off from her ship.

“I’m thankful that you have managed to come here, on top of all your duties.” Quinn said.

“Don’t be silly.” Helen replied. “You’re my leader and future husband, after all. I’m not just going to be one of those wives that just sit back and let others do all that work. Whenever you need me, of course I’ll be there.”

As usual, Helen was quite headstrong and upfront, and it was a type of personality that Quinn didn’t mind, but just didn’t really know how to deal with. Now that Helen was here, it meant everyone was there to embark on their Blade Island trip.

It hadn’t been long since Sam’s announcement had passed, perhaps eight or so hours had passed, but Quinn had no choice.

“Do you mind if we make a stop?” Quinn asked, as they took a detour and Quinn headed to one of the training rooms, where Nate and Layla were both in. As soon as the door was heard sliding open.

Layla could see Quinn, and Helen by his side. Seeing this, Layla stormed forward forgetting what she was doing, and headed towards the both of them, before stopping directly in front of Helen.

“You.” Layla pointed at the woman. “I challenge you to a duel and the loser will have to submit to one request from the winner!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1109: Battle for Romeo

Everyone who was needed for the Blade Island mission was now present, so Quinn had gone to the training room to see whether by some miracle Layla had learned how to use Qi. However, he had never expected her to completely ignore him, instead storming right up to Helen and challenging her to a duel like that.

‘Layla has never been this confrontational in the past, she is usually quite the calm and chilled girl. Just what’s gotten into her?’ Quinn wondered.

Noticing the puzzled look on Quinn’s face, Nate moved over to where Quinn was and pulled him back away a little from the invisible sparks that everyone could feel between the two girls. Everyone who had been training just moments ago, stopped after hearing Layla’s loud challenge.

“You look like you don’t have a clue what you’ve just done, do you?” Nate asked Quinn in a hushed tone.

“What do you mean?” Quinn whispered back.

“Honestly Quinn, how can you be that dense? It doesn’t take a genius to see that Layla obviously has had feelings for you for a long time, but we were all there when Helen declared that she wanted to go out with you. So what do you think Layla feels towards Helen?”

“By bringing her here, you’ve just added oil to the fire and now you have two gorgeous and perfect girls fighting over you! Well, Romeo, you should have decided which one to pick.” Nate explained as he punched Quinn on the arm hard.

Just like any single guy, it was hard for Nate to keep his pent up frustrations under check when seeing that the girls who had feelings for his friend were even ready to fight for him. Besides, if anyone could take a hit, then it would be Quinn.

After staring at each other for a few seconds, Helen turned away to look at Quinn, who didn’t know how to deal with the situation, before she turned back at Layla smiling.

“Hmph, I can already guess what you want me to do if you win. Fine, I accept the duel.” Helen declared.

At this point, Quinn couldn’t imagine a worse outcome for this situation. No matter who won, he would be the one who would need to deal with the aftermath. However, before he could do anything about it, everyone else had moved aside. Meanwhile Nate, continued to drag Quinn away letting the two girls conclude their business without him.

Helen stood on one side while Layla stood on the other as well.

“I don’t want to bully you, so this is your last chance to back out.” Helen offered. “My Daisy faction used to be one of the strongest factions before we were taken over.” She was confident in her words.

"I have been with the Cursed faction for a long while, the very group that took over and beat your Daisy faction!" Layla snapped back, as she checked her bow.

"Easy there ladies, we're all friends here. It looks like you might need a little ref to settle your differences. Since I can't afford to see you two girls get hurt, it will have to be me." Nate decided as he stepped forward, and raised both of his arms.

"Before you begin, here are some basic ground rules. No strikes at the other's head or heart area. The match is over when one of you surrenders or I declare that they can no longer continue." Nate stated.

"Agreed." Both of them nodded.

"Begin!" Nate shouted as he swung both arms down, and quickly went back to where Quinn and the others were up against the wall.

"So, who do you think is going to win?" Nate asked, as Layla placed five arrows into her bow, and was pressing to fire them off, while Helen threw several seeds on the ground which immediately sprouted into the deadly plants that would fire off spikes.

"Or perhaps I should ask who would you prefer to win?" Nate asked with a cheeky grin. He didn't even try to hide the fact that he was enjoying every single bit of the situation. He felt like Quinn deserved this, being the playboy he was without realising it.

"If I had to answer honestly, I see no way for Layla to be winning this. Even Peter had struggled when we fought against Helen." Quinn answered, not letting Nate's teasing get to him.

"Oh really? Well, I think you might be in for a surprise then." Nate said, as he looked towards a part of the wall. Quinn followed his gaze and found several cracks on the wall, with small holes in them as well.

'Layla's telekinesis ability was never strong enough to accomplish something like that, She also doesn't have the best beast equipment on either. Could it actually be that she managed to learn how to use Qi in such a short amount of time?!'

He briefly recalled that Leo had once tried to teach Layla the basics of Qi, but according to him, Layla's aptitude for it had been frankly horrible. She had been an extremely slow learner and even his best estimate had been that she would need at least half a year of intense training before she might be able to learn the first stage of it.

Under his tutelage she had constantly tried, but she just didn't seem suited for it. It also had not helped that Erin had quickly shown off her own talent in that regard, further crushing Layla's ego.

As Layla's fingers let go of the arrows, moving after what anyone had expected, they started to spin and the top of them were infused with great power. The flowers shot out their spikes trying to hit the arrows but when the two collided there was a clear difference in which was stronger, and the arrows continued going forward piercing right through the stems causing them to shrivel.

Even then, the arrows continued as they went and hit the wall behind them, but a single one had changed direction and was going straight for Helen.

"You have some fire in you I see!" Helen praised her, as she pulled out her whip, and snapped it, hitting the arrow by the wooden part, breaking it in half. Her whip was fast enough and strong enough to destroy the arrows without hitting the sharp head.

Something that if Layla wanted to win, she had to figure out how to get past. Soon, she started to run but it was at her usual speed. She didn't slow down, and continued to pull the arrows firing them.

'My best bet is to confuse her. I need to concentrate and use my ability at the same time, but it's hard to do that while also focusing on the fight. Is this what you've been doing all this time, Quinn?' Layla thought.

The thought only continued to spur her on, as she saw Helen, snapping all the arrows in place, and planting seeds at the same time.

"How was she able to learn to use Qi so fast? It doesn't look like she can use it throughout her body yet, otherwise she would be able to move faster, but she's able to transfer it from her fingertips into the arrow? This should only be possible with the second stage Qi, rather than the first."

Was it really possible to outright skip an entire stage without any mastery in Qi?

“Look at her fingers. You should also be able to smell it.” Nate pointed out.

Sniffing, Quinn could certainly smell something, blood. It wasn't human blood either. When looking at the training room floor, he could see small drops of blood around the place, and he then noticed the state of Layla's fingers. They were heavily bleeding, each time she pulled the string on the bow.

“That my friend, is the power of love, REAL LOVE. For someone to go that far... She must have never stopped. She seems to know that she doesn't have talent in this area, but there is one thing she certainly isn't lacking. Determination. Ever since coming here, she hasn't stopped pulling that string, and firing those arrows. She would constantly ask me for pointers, time and time again.”

“I didn't understand why she was so desperate, but now I think I understand. Some idiot must have said something to her without thinking about it and now she has to prove herself.” Nate commented, as the fight continued on.

The arrows were still moving at a great speed, and they were coming out as fast as ever, but the pain on her fingertips was growing, and her accuracy was starting to take a toll. It might have been different if Layla had taken a break before the fight, but after nearly half a day of training her concentration was waning.

Unlike other abilities, the telekinesis ability was one that took huge amounts of concentration, especially to move around as many arrows as she was doing.

“Don't think all I can do is stay still!” Helen shouted, as she dashed forward, running past the arrows and hitting the ones in front with her whip. They were destroyed in seconds, but there were still more coming from behind.

With the beast gear on, Helen's speed was greater than Layla's and throwing out her whip, she tangled the other's leg and pulled to drag the body forward.

“I win, little girl.” Helen said as she stood in front of Layla.

However, Layla wasn't done yet. The arrows from behind were still coming towards Helen. As they inched closer, a wall of vines were raised. Although the arrows hadn't stopped, they had been slowed down.

Helen had already grabbed Layla by the neck with her other hand, lifting her and using her own body to stop the arrows. From the looks of it Layla still wanted to control the arrows, so Helen put some slight pressure on her throat, making the other stop her feeble resistance.

Before the situation could escalate any further Nate came forward and declared Helen to be the winner. The next moment, Helen let go of her.

From the look in Layla's eyes, Quinn could see how disappointed she was in herself, but he was extremely proud of seeing her improve to this degree.

'Layla, you shouldn't be sad that you lost. You managed to fight to this degree without being able to properly use Qi, and you also didn't use any of your vampire powers or take on your other forms. Although Helen didn't use her soul ability either, if the two of you had truly gone all out, with a little bit more time of training, it's hard to say who would have won that fight.'

"I'll think of what I want you to do some other time." Helen said as she walked off.

Layla felt frustrated. She had finally felt as if she had made a breakthrough with her powers, but the result spoke for itself.

'Everyone around me is improving so fast, but me....'

Just when Quinn was ready to go up and console her, a certain alarm was heard through the ship.

"Everyone, World Leader Oscar has an important message to announce. Please stop whatever you're doing and listen closely. The World Leader has an important and urgent message to announce."

In every room on the Cursed ship, large hologram screens appeared and Oscar was there from the chest up with a serious look on his face.

“I hope everyone is doing okay. You all must be worried about the Dalki attack, but at the moment I have come to share an important message and warning with you all. News should have already spread of what has recently happened to the Graylash family. We have made the decision to make everyone aware of what exactly has been going on.”

Hearing these words, Sam and Quinn already knew what this message was going to be about. Oscar was going to inform the world about the existence of Vampires.

My Vampire System Chapter 1110: Everyone knows

At this time, Oscar’s message was being played for all of humanity to see. Wherever there was a faction base, a spaceship out far in the sticks, or even if you were currently in the school toilet. If one didn’t have a screen ready where they were, then one would appear from their watch, and if they didn’t even have that, then it was still impossible to miss the message since it was being played over intercoms everywhere.

‘Why does he have to send out this message now of all times?’ Sam thought as soon as he heard the introduction. ‘I was hoping for Quinn and the others to be gone by then, and I was going to explain everything to the faction myself in the meantime. Now it’s going to look like we were trying to hide it from our own people.’

Whether they liked it or not, they were about to be thrown into a rollercoaster of a situation and there was nothing they could do to stop it.

“As if the war with the Dalki was not enough of a problem, a certain group of people have decided to make use of this chaos for their own nefarious goals.” Oscar continued. “This is an important message to everyone out there, as before we had believed that the Dalki were our only enemy, yet those people have actively allied with them! In a time like this we should have been able to unite and fight together for the sake of humanity!”

Although this message had already spread amongst those in the military and those fighting, the general public didn’t yet know about any of this, and it was already starting to worry them as they looked at each other.

“We have come to learn that these people aren’t exactly the same as us. They may look like us, act like us, use abilities like us and they have even been living peacefully amongst us for at least the last few years. We refer to these people as the ‘V’. So far, we have only discovered a few things about them. At the moment, there does not seem to be a surefire way to tell them apart from us under normal circumstances, only when they use their powers. Their eyes start to glow red, allowing them to use a special red aura which grants them access to their weird powers.”

With this information, people on the Cursed ship were starting to suspect something was up. Helen’s head immediately turned towards Quinn. It was no longer a secret that he had used certain red aura powers to fight off against the Dalki in the war.

“The reason why we are telling you all of this is because recently our own groups have suffered multiple attacks from people who they had been certain they could trust. Perhaps if they had known a bit more they would have been able to avoid the outcome that has happened so far. We want everyone to be wary as the V have a way to convert others into one of their ranks and some of them also seem to be able to control others actions to a certain degree.”

“I understand that this news comes as a shock to everyone, but we have to stay strong, now more than ever, and all of you deserve to know the truth of who we are facing! Although it won’t work on every V, we know that some of them have a strong reaction to blood. If there is someone that you feel is suspicious or you don’t trust then I suggest a little test, but this is still not a sure way to deal with the problem.”

“Lastly, I want to inform everyone that the V are not a unified force and have split into at least two groups. Just like they are those who have allied with the Dalki, the other group has come forward in their wish to help us in the fight against the Dalki! The latter group are those that are part of the Cursed faction. Their help so far has been enormous and they intend to use their extraordinary powers to continue to help us fight out there!”

“Please everyone, stay safe, and stay on guard!”

For a brief second, it felt like on the whole of the Cursed ship there was silence between everyone, and even where Quinn was there was no sound at all.

In the command room, Sam was banging his fist on the table.

“Oscar I understand your situation, but did you really have to do it like that?!” Sam shouted. “How is the human race supposed to stay calm when they don’t know who to trust? The way you explained it, the main finger and all questions will now be pointed towards us!”

Soon, talk started amongst those on the Cursed ship.

“Hey, you’re not a V, like what they said, right?” A member asked his buddy.

“No, I’m not, are you?” The other questioned back, only for the former to shake his head. “But didn’t he say that the Cursed faction had Vs? What do you think he meant by talking about blood, betrayal? This doesn’t make sense.”

On the Cursed faction ship, the general consensus was confusion and for Quinn, he was left in a training room with all eyes on him.

“If I was to guess, V is just a codename that would stand for vampire.” Helen stated her own thoughts on the matter. “Beings that react to blood, wield a strange red aura and have powers on top of their ability.”

These statements were clearly being directed towards Quinn, and he could hear the heartbeats of all those who had not been turned, beating rapidly, a sign that they were frightened by this possibility.

“React to blood, what do they mean by that, and is the leader one of them?” One of the trainees whispered to another.

“Look at him standing there, he’s not saying anything to deny it, so he has to be one.” Her friend whispered back.

“Shut up! All of you!” Nate ordered, as he went to stand by Quinn’s side. “So what if we are humans, vampires or werewolves for all you care?! In the end, shouldn’t it matter what actions we have done? Have you already forgotten what we had to go through to save you all?! Not only did we bring you and your families here, we shared our home and our food with you, made sure to protect you and even helped you all grow stronger, but suddenly because of some message you started to doubt us?!”

“Fine, whoever feels that we don’t deserve their trust, get out and leave this place!” Nate now shouted in a furious tone, making all of the trainees and even Helen drop their heads in embarrassment and shame.

“Come on Nate, it’s not like that! How are we supposed to react after hearing such news? We just know that the Graylash family got attacked by one of their own and now suddenly we have to come to terms that the same type of people are hidden amongst us! We’re just scared.” One of the braver trainees defended their actions.

Meanwhile, Sam went around to get a picture of what the general thoughts were after everyone had heard the message. Just as he had suspected the hushed comments weren’t really in their favor. The people talked about another race of people that they had never known about, and some others had already figured out that the codename V was just a substitute for the myth known as vampires.

They wondered if those of the Cursed faction might actually be working with the Dalki to secretly take them, and how could they trust each other now. How could they trust that the Cursed faction were really on their side and weren’t planning on turning on them eventually.

‘I knew something like this was going to happen!’ Sam thought, his fists tightened in fury. ‘We’ll be lucky if even half of our own faction continues to trust us for not having come out ourselves earlier.’

A few seconds later and all the screens that had turned off seconds ago, all lit up once again, this time the one that could be seen was none other than Owen. As World Leaders, they were able to send out an emergency message like this whenever they wished.

So even though Owen was nowhere near Oscar at the time, he could still send out a message to everyone, and it looked like he was in the Graylash base.

“Greetings, everyone. I wouldn’t be surprised if a lot of you are currently frightened after hearing what has happened and learning of the existence of a new race. Personally, I don’t know why they decided on the stupid name V, so let’s just call them by the name most of you must have already figured out.

Vampires!” Owen began in an unexpected way that was guaranteed to get him an earful from Oscar later.

“First of all, let me start by saying that they aren’t like the stories you might have read in books and such. Not all races are like the Dalki, and we have already come to learn that not all of them are bad. I have decided to come out like this, because I felt that Oscar’s message has left out too much. I wish to rectify that, by publicly stating that Quinn Talen, the leader of the Cursed faction, has saved my life on multiple occasions. Not just mine, but many of those on my fleet owe him for that! We all owe the Cursed faction.”

“You may have your doubts, but there is not a single doubt in my mind that Quinn and his Cursed faction are on our side! Right now, I trust them more than even my own family members, which is why if anyone from my family has anything negative to say about the Cursed faction in my presence, they will be severely punished!”

“As one of the World Leaders, and leader of the Graylash faction, we completely stand behind Quinn and his Cursed group of vampires!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1111: Can thank me or not

“I think it’s only right that if we stay on this ship, that they should at least tell us every one who is a vampire and everyone who is not, don’t you think that’s fair?” A member of the cursed faction asked.

“I think that’s reasonable, after all Oscar told us to look out for them, but did you hear what Owen said, it seems like he has a lot of trust in our Cursed faction.”

“I think that’s bull, why didn’t they tell us, if they weren’t planning something they should have told us from the beginning.”

“Yeah, like that would have worked. Would you have believed them if it wasn’t such a serious message, and would you really say you were okay with it? The only thing I do agree with you on, is that they should at least tell us who and who isn’t a vampire.”

There was non-stop talking around the whole world about the two messages they had received, and especially those on the Cursed ship. The first mention of the V's had sprouted a doubt in many minds, not trusting those next to them, but there were two parts to this message, as the second one delivered by Owen, tried to make sure, and make everyone know full well that the Graylash family were on the Cursed side.

It was because of this, that while opinions were originally one sided with fear, they were now equally split down the middle, but there was one thing they were all waiting for, that was an answer. An answer from the Cursed faction leaders themselves.

"Quinn, what are you doing?" Helen said as she went to approach him, while everyone else stood back. "Is what everyone is thinking true, that you're not really a human?"

Quinn clenched his fist for a few seconds, the reason he was standing still was because he continued to listen to everyone's opinions before he was going to decide what to do, and he had finally come up with his answer.

"I'm not human?" Quinn replied back to Helen. "Is that what it looks like to you, do I really look any different? Does that change how you look at me, how you will treat me from now on?"

Helen paused for a few seconds, and looked at Quinn's face. His face wasn't one of worry, but instead it looked more like relief. Relief that a long secret that he had been hiding had finally been revealed.

"No." Helen stated. "I was shocked of course, but as long as the you I know so far has been the real you, then nothing has changed."

With this, Quinn decided to walk past Helen, and Nate, with Layla following him along as they were sure he was about to do something, whether it be a good thing or a bad thing, they did not know.

"Helen, I never got to thank you for the beast gear that you handed to me, it was a nice gift." Quinn said. "It helped me out a lot, and I hope none of this changes our relationship."

Before she could reply Quinn had already left, and for the first time, Helen was left there without knowing what to say.

'Did I say the wrong thing, I thought I was getting closer to him, and then this happened...but the others, they walked with him, and never were worried for a second, even that block head boy.'

While questing her own thoughts, soon an announcement was to be made.

"All members of the cursed faction, please meet in the main hall. There is an announcement to be made, where Quinn Talen will be present. Please make your way to the main hall immediately." Sam stated.

Those on the Cursed ship were a bit nervous, they had no idea what was about to happen, but at the same time they couldn't exactly just leave either, but as they saw others confidently heading to the main hall without any problems, they too did the same.

A few wanted to leave, attempt to go through the teleporters or steal a ship, but there were those that stopped them.

"Let's at least hear what they have to say first, and we don't know who is who at the moment or what." some members said.

Most of those that headed to the hall without hesitation had been directly saved by Quinn. There was a time when the whole Parasite faction was poisoned, and Quinn was the one that saved their lives, never forcing them to do something they didn't want to.

There were those who had lost their lives, but their families continued to be supported by the Cursed faction, through credits, beast crystals, and housing. Quinn had made sure that everyone that fought for him, and had lost their lives would be compensated.

At the moment, Quinn, and the rest of the Cursed leaders who were present, were standing on top of a platform, where the bridge would be used to travel between the main hall and the command centre. Below were all the members of the Cursed that were on the ship.

"Sam, let's send the whole world one last message." Quinn said with a smile.

Sam knew what Quinn wanted to do, and he was already prepared. On the platinum card given to them, this was what could be used to send out a message to everyone. The same way Owen and Oscar did.

Sam nodded, and Quinn pressed a button, holding it down, and soon his face and everything was being displayed to the whole world.

“I think after getting a message from two of the world leaders, it’s only right that you get another one from the last world leader, the one that somehow has ended up in the middle of all this.

“I’m going to just say it to you all now, what you have heard is all true, but I want you to think about it. Oscar, Owen and myself. We are the three that you trusted to lead you up till this point, and they still trust me despite knowing what I am.

“That’s right, I am a V, but I wasn’t always a V. I was human, a weak human who was bullied everyday in their school life for never having power. Abused by the military system and shut down for never being of any use in this war. Just like many of you out there.

“Yet, now that I have power, I am in the position of where I am today, but my goal from the beginning has been to change the way the system was. In a way, I believe the system treated those that were weak inhumanly. Yet ever since I became a V, I was treated more like a human than ever before.”

For those listening, some of them were confused, and it didn’t really answer their question whether they could trust the Cursed faction or not, but at that point that Quinn didn’t care. He wasn’t there to change the minds of everyone.

From being in charge of his own faction and more, he realised it was impossible, all he could do was try his best to help those around him, and those that wished to help him. These were the people that he would fight for, and continue to fight for.

“For those on the Cursed faction planets and on this very ship. You are free to leave, you always have been and that will stay the same. I, with my group of people, will continue to protect all of those in the Cursed faction, to me nothing has changed.”

Soon, Quinn's eyes began to glow red and everyone could see it on their screens, but it wasn't only his eyes. Sam, who was standing next to him, activated his powers, Layla, Nate and all the other vampires from the Cursed faction stood there with their eyes glowing red.

At that point, the broadcast had ended, but those in the Cursed faction were left confused. With Quinn taking a back seat. Sam walked out instead.

"We understand you are all scared, and the unknown would scare anyone, but Quinn here saved all of our lives. Like he said, we weren't originally V's. We aren't some blood sucking monsters and everything will remain the same.

"If there is anything, any request people wish to ask, then feel free to do so. However, while most of you will be busy deciding whether to trust us or not, we'll be busy trying to end this damn war for your sake, and you can thank us later or not."

It took a few hours for everyone to calm down and it even seemed like there were a few arguments and scuffles on the Cursed ship, as they argued over who to trust and who not to trust. However, eventually there were those that just couldn't stand to be on the Cursed ship anymore, and had decided to leave to join other factions.

What came as a big surprise though, was how little people had decided to leave, fewer than a hundred or so. Those on the Cursed ship, worked with the Cursed leaders, the cloisist, and it actually helped their cause when they learnt that not only Quinn was a vampire.

The bond they had built while living on this giant ship called home, couldn't be broken too easily, but it was hard to tell if the rest of the world would think the same.

"Quinn, you just leave everything to me." Sam said. "Go out there and do what you need to do."

As all of the preparations were ready to head to the blade island.

My Vampire System Chapter 1112: It's not easy

Of course a few hours after the announcement, and a few speeches wasn't going to settle the hearts and minds of the restless. Nonetheless, Quinn and his group of people still had their own things that needed to be done.

Everyone, who was told to go to the blade island, was told to head to the ship docking area, where they would then take a medium sized ship with all of them on, and they would then head off to the Blade island together.

When Quinn had arrived, he didn't expect for him, Eno, Brock and Mona to be the first ones there, while the others were still busy getting ready.

"It seems like the world is getting surprise after surprise." Mona said. "And assuming since you are related to him, you guys are part of this V group as well." She sighed and placed her hand on her head as if everything was giving her a headache.

"Honestly, with everything going on, aliens, beasts and super abilities, vampires existing in the world just isn't too wild in my book. I'm just glad you're on our side." Mona said with a smile.

Seeing Mona's reaction had settled Quinn a bit. Of course he was worried about people's opinion; it was hard for him not to be. Everything that he had managed to build up could have crumbled just then, and he had no idea if it was currently crumbling at the moment or not.

It seemed like the people who were in higher positions of power, those who had some type of control over their lives, were less afraid.

"This is what you wanted, right?" Quinn asked, looking at Eno. "You've been pushing for the world to know about vampires, so you must have an idea of what's going to happen."

Looking back at Quinn, Eno's face seemed quite surprised that he had asked this type of question.

"This is what I wanted? If it was, then I would have revealed to everyone that vampires existed a long time ago. Different situations require different solutions and it seemed like it was inevitable that something was going to occur.

“However, I must say that the reaction wasn’t not what I was expecting, but I still have many things to see until I make up my mind. Perhaps their reactions haven’t been so drastic because there is a common enemy, and remember the human’s aren’t the only ones that you need to worry about.”

No matter how much Quinn hated Eno, he was right. One of the things that hadn’t been revealed to them all, was that there was a whole society of vampires on another planet, and some of them didn’t exactly want to get along with humanity.

For now, while they were preparing against Arthur, or debating with each other, things were okay, but if Bryce, or another vampire was to act, Quinn would need to step in.

‘Will I have to take the role that Arthur gave up, the role of the Punisher?’ Quinn thought as he looked at his system title. Even though he was the tenth leader, he was also classed as the leader of the Punishers.

Soon everyone started to arrive together. Sil had come along with Shiro, and both of them seemed to be smiling. It made Quinn feel at peace. After all, he wasn’t sure if making Sil go to school at the time was a good thing, but now it seemed like he had made a new friend, outside Borden and himself.

Logan had entered along with little Borden on his shoulder. It looked like once in a while, Logan was still trying to find out a way of either prolonging Borden’s human-size fighting state, or making more of the solution from before.

In a way, if they could control the demon tier beast, there was a good chance that as long as the beast was still alive, Logan could continue to create a serum for Borden. Fex had wandered in on his own, which suited him in a way.

A person who got on well with everyone, but wasn’t particularly close enough with anyone to click with them. Then, the last two had arrived, Helen and Layla. Quinn didn’t know if it was a coincidence, or if the two had met up and decided to come together. The latter was very unlikely, especially with the way the two of them were looking at each other.

As they walked towards him, they were power walking, one person trying to get in front of the other.

“Do you really think you can win him over, because you two are similar.” Helen said. The cat was out of the bag, and from the announcement, it was clear Layla was also the same as Quinn. Which meant in a way, she had one up on her.

‘Are you sure bringing both of them along is a good idea?’ Vincent asked. ‘The two of them are already butting heads and we haven’t even left yet.’

‘A promise is a promise, and Layla actually far exceeded my expectations in that fight. How am I meant to say no to someone who tried that hard?’ Quinn said, looking at Layla still having the same fire in her eyes.

After seeing how she was so upset before, Quinn was a bit worried it would take her long to recover. Especially considering her subclass that was more emotional compared to others, but she was back up on her feet and more determined.

Shoving Layla off to the side, Helen had eventually won the bargaining match and now stood in front of Quinn.

“Quinn I realised that before I didn’t really show you how determined I was. Look, I’ve said how much I like you and I mean it, and I’m not the type to beg.” Helen explained. “But if you really think for a second I care about you being a vampire, or that will change how I think, then you are wrong. You can turn people right, then turn me, turn me now.” Helen said, as she pulled her shirt slightly and started to bare her neck.

Quinn briefly looked round and could see that everyone was looking at him.

“Well she is feisty and might turn into something good, it might not be a bad idea.” Eno suggested. “You will need a queen to tend to your needs someday.”

“Look, it’s really not like that, besides we don’t turn people by biting them.” Quinn nervously started to speak fast, trying to get all the information out at once. “You could also turn into something dangerous. You can’t eat your favourite foods...”

At that moment, one person had stood in-between the two of them, one and one no one had expected, and it was Fex. He lightly pushed Helen away.

“Do you think being a vampire is easy?” Fex asked. “This isn’t something that you should choose on a whim just because there is a boy you like. As much as we didn’t want to tell others, we are dangerous beings, and we can turn into monsters.

“I...I couldn’t do anything, I couldn’t control myself as my body called for blood, and then I killed one of my best friends. One of the leaders of the Cursed group. Even though I knew what I was doing, I could see everything I was doing and I couldn’t stop it.

“Being a vampire is not easy.” Fex said.

The tension in the air was heavy after that, and it was a reminder to everyone there that being a vampire wasn’t a pleasant thing. There was a reason Quinn had called it the Cursed family in the first place.

The doors being heard open had broken the awkward moment in the room, and instead of embarrassing herself any further. Helen chose to just walk past everyone and head into the ship, as she waited for it to leave.

‘What has gotten into you Helen, you have never acted like this before, is it because of that brat. I need to stop seeing this as a competition.’ She thought, as she began to cool her head down.

The one who entered was Sam.

“Before you guys go off, these are the other three people that will be joining you on your trip.” Sam said.

“Bucky?!” Quinn called out.

“Can you at least remember my name?” Chucky replied.

After releasing the report to the whole world, and having two additional world messages being sent out, Oscar was sitting in his seat, shaking his head. He had deliberated when would be the best time, what would be the best thing to say, but in the end it looked like it still wasn't good enough.

"Sir, I know you have multiple requests coming in about the V's, and I have filtered those messages off to the side as you have requested. However there is a report about multiple Dalki being seen in a certain area." Jane reported as she scrolled through her tablet, and brought up the report in front of him.

"It seems like a group of Dalki have been spotted on an ex orange portal planet of ours." Jane reported.

"Ex orange?"

"Yes. The second base at the time had sent out their students to do an expedition there. It turned out that there were advanced tier beasts and possibly more dangerous beasts on there, so the portals were changed to a red portal.

"Soon after our soldiers experienced an attack and decided to abandon the planet, but we still had some surveillance technology left on there. While one of the groups was going through it, they found that a small faction had taken base there."

If the Dalki had gotten on the planet it must have been through a different method compared to usual, and the fact that it had gone unnoticed. The main issue was the old orange portal planet was one of the planets that the human's claimed to own, and it was in the middle of their other beast planets.

"Are there any humans on the planet?" Oscar asked.

"That's the strange thing sir, it seems like the Dalki, they are protecting the shelter that has been built there. It looks like some survivors had decided to make it their base after they had survived. We are unable to confirm whether or not they are V's or not. What would you like to do sir?" Jane asked.

After thinking about it for a while, Oscar had made a choice, due to how close the planet was to the other forces, it was dangerous if they were to attack, they had to get rid of the Dalki.

“We will get rid of the Dalki, it’s time for the Earthborn to move.” Oscar ordered

My Vampire System Chapter 1113: Taming a beast

It was a tough ride as they went from the large Cursed ship, all the way back to earth. Not because they had run into any problems on their way or anything, but just because the group of people going this time weren’t exactly the friendliest bunch, nor did they get on well with each other.

The two girls who were interested in Quinn had spent most of their time being petty towards the other, while also trying to avoid each other. Making sure to shut the bathroom door, even if the other was waiting outside. Leaving the kettle empty if they knew who the next person was.

At least Brock and Eno kept to themselves, although whenever Quinn did stumble upon the duo they seemed to be scheming things on their own.

Then there was also the group of three people who Sam had introduced. The first person was Chucky, whose ability hadn’t been high levelled originally, but after the mission of looking after Sil he had been well compensated. Thanks to that money he procured the ability books he had needed and had managed to raise his ability to level seven.

The next one that had come on board was another of the Cursed leaders, Megan. According to Sam, Dennis had been completely against the idea. If she was going, then he wanted to come along, but Sam had reassured him that with Quinn, she would perhaps be more safe from an attack than if something was to happen on the ship, and they needed a certain amount of power to defend themselves.

As for the last person Quinn recognised her, but he was unable to put his finger on where and when they had met. Hana was a girl with short spiked hair, who had her hands banged up all the way to her forearms, reminding him of the martial arts god in ways. She was a person who was close to Wevil and part of the Parasite faction and had a level six ability.

Although there were those from their faction that had higher levels, Sam admitted that after the announcement many had asked not to be sent, now that they knew who they were. Although they didn't want to leave the Cursed faction, and would have gone with Quinn if ordered, he could tell they felt uncomfortable.

'It might be just me but this whole atmosphere reminds me of school. People always had their own little groups there as well.' Quinn thought.

"I wouldn't worry about anything." Logan spoke up, as he could see the concern on Quinn's face. The two of them were at a side table that was similar to a bar bench. They could sit on the edge, and watch everyone else as they did their own thing. Little Borden was on the table, and looked to be doing some stretches.

"I think with Brock and Eno, we can lower our guard a bit. It's been a while but they haven't done anything out of the ordinary, and it seems like they really do want to make sure the Dalki don't get their hands on that dragon." Logan explained.

Just then, Fex decided to join them, and before sitting down he raised his hands in the air above Borden nearly three times his height. The next second, Borden bent his knees and leapt up, touching the top of Fex's hand, even hitting it away.

"I see you're just as strong as ever, I'm glad not all the Dalki are as strong as you, otherwise I might not be alive standing today." Fex said, as he sat down next to Quinn on his right side. "You might be right Logan, but I still think we should be careful.

"He is the one that told everyone he was going into eternal slumber but never did, the person who tricked Arthur, and also the one that justified everything he did with I Quinn by calling them tests." Fex argued. "So although we can trust that he might not be out there to kill us, I still think we need to be careful. On top of that, what about the Vampire World?"

"The way I think Eno sees it, is that the Dalki need both parts of the Dragon, correct? But then aren't both halves equally important as well? In some ways, I think we should at least warn Bryce that the Dalki may be coming after them as well."

“There might be a lot of vampires I don’t get along with there, but there are few I really care about. Most importantly my sister, my father, the thirteenth family and other people I still care about are also there.” Fex explained.

Fex was right, but there was a slight reason why Quinn wasn’t too worried, his system. Perhaps he was being over reliant on it, but if anyone attempted to attack the tenth castle or the fourteenth castle, he should get a message, and he was sure he would do so if the Dalki did come to attack.

“I don’t think the Dalki forces are large enough to go after two places at once.” Logan replied. “There can’t be too many of them, especially since they can’t make anymore, the energy from the first dragon was almost all used up, that’s why I couldn’t create enough of the green liquid injection for Borden, however it sounds like this green one is alive and kicking.”

Eventually, Helen had shoved Layla while trying to get a snack from the table, and Layla once again, was thrown to the side and had fallen into Mona. Hitting her on her back, making her drop her purple lipstick she was placing on her lips at the time.

“Will you stop it?! I feel like I’m on board a ship full of children!” Mona shouted in annoyance. “I’m going to go mad if this continues. Quinn, aren’t you the leader around here? Punish them or at least say something before I will!”

“Erghh...” Quinn hesitated as he didn’t know what to say. “How much longer do we have until we arrive?” He asked meekly.

“It looks like we’re nearly there.” Shiro said as he pointed at the vast blue ocean. They had already gone through the space teleporting station, and had arrived at earth, but seeing the water was making Quinn’s stomach act a little strange. He tried to avoid looking at the sea, while placing his hands on his stomach.

“Are you getting sick just looking at the ocean?” Logan asked. “I understood when we were in the small submarine but we’re simply flying over it now.”

“It’s not that.” Quinn replied. “It’s just I’m starting to remember the last time... who knows what creatures are in there?”

Thinking back, Logan did recall that they had run into a giant beast that was also located in the water.

“Are you talking about that giant beast in the water? That beast should also be at a high tier, and might be quite handy to have.” Logan said.

“Maybe it will serve as good practice.” Eno interrupted their conversation, it appeared that despite him talking to Brock he had been listening in the whole time, but in some ways Quinn wanted Eno to know what he thought of him and the words spoken about him

“Should we really exhaust ourselves like that? We don’t even know what level it’s at?” Fex argued against it.

“Not for fighting, but we can use this beast to test just how strong Sil’s abilities are after copying everyone.” Eno explained.

“Oh, that ‘s how his ability works.” Chucky commented, listening in on everything, but he might as well have said nothing, because no one had heard him.

Soon the eyes turned onto Sil, who looked a little shy raising his shoulders trying to block the eyes on him.

“I can give it a go, but I don’t really know how the taming ability works, like what happens if I can’t tame it, didn’t you say we have to beat it up or something?” Sil questioned.

“It looks like you might have to learn on the go!” Brock shouted, as he quickly steered the ship to the side. A large tentacle had appeared out of the water. The tentacle’s width was as big as the ships and if it had hit, then they would have all been slammed into the water.

“Get to land, hurry!” Quinn shouted, a little more afraid than usual.

After staring out of the way, Brock landed the ship quite quickly on the sandy beach, and soon, the large head of the giant creature, that was pointy shaped, and a large singular eye could be seen, poking out of the top of the water. It looked quite similar to that of a giant squid.

Everyone quickly got off from the ship, and as long as they stayed on the beach it looked like the squid was going to continuously attack them.

[Inspect]

[Demi-god tier beast]

'I knew it was strong, but I didn't think there would be something that high tier still on earth, surrounding the island. Just what is this place?!' Quinn thought.

Stepping in front of all the others calm as ever with her pointy hat was Mona.

"You need to learn how to use the ability, right? Well I guess this is a perfect way to show you, and it looks like I might be able to get myself a new pet while I'm at it." She said with a big grin.

"Remember, I too was one of the leaders of the Big Four, my strength doesn't just rely on the beast I have with me. You guys stay back!" She said, as she charged forward.

My Vampire System Chapter 1114: The god of the sea vs a human

The initial reaction in most of those that were there, was to run in and to try and help Mona, not because they thought she was weak, but because that was what they had always done since the beginning.

They had fought against beasts time and time again, that it was now almost a natural instinct to them, however, not all of them had faced a Demi-god tier beast before, and its sheer size had made others think twice.

Although not all of them felt the same way, as Chucky, Megan and Hana had decided to pop off into the jungle, and hide behind some of the large leaves next to some Palm trees, they couldn't help but watch what was about to happen.

"Hey, they're going to be okay, right?" Hana asked, since she really hadn't seen any of the Cursed faction fight for a long time. The last time she had seen Quinn take on an emperor tier beast in the desert, but this beast seemed to be a completely different story.

"Don't worry, Quinn, and Sil are there, and I think with them two it will be enough, let's just try not to get hurt." Chucky said, as he carefully touched one of the black balls he carried with him, just in case they did need to do something.

Then there was Megan, who was shaking. She didn't want to get involved at all. She had gone away from the fighting scene and had mostly helped out Sam with his duties in the command centre. This was due to a dear friend of hers, Mitchell dying while trying to fight a humanoid legendary tier beast, back when she was still part of the Crows.

While everyone who was a leader in the Cursed had improved, she hadn't.

"I'm not suited for this stuff. I can't, I'm not like them. I didn't change, I'm still human." Megan mumbled as she covered her ears.

"Sorry about that." Quinn said, with his hand held out and stretched towards her. "I'll leave you in a safe place where you can't get hurt." Closing his fist, the shadow lock was soon activated and Megan could no longer see the beast.

As Quinn was going to move onto the other two they soon stood up and protested.

"No, wait!" They both shouted.

"We won't get in the way, but seeing you guys, the best of the best out like this, we don't want to miss it either." Hana said, speaking for both of them, but Chucky seemingly agreed as he nodded his head up and down.

Quinn placed his hand down as he thought it would be okay. The two of them weren't weak travellers by any means. It was just with the job they were doing, only the best of the best could face such things.

"Wait a second, Quinn if you're here, who's helping out Mona in the fight?" Chucky asked.

As he stopped to the side, they could soon see Mona battling against the Demi-god tier beast and she was doing so alone, without the help of the others. They were all ready to rush in, but Mona had made it clear that she could battle the beast on her own.

"I think she will be okay." Eno said and hearing him say these words, they had slightly agreed to stand by for the first few moments.

One of the large tentacles came down, ready to crash down on Mona chucking up a large amount of water. When it was about to hit her, raising her arm a small type of purple see through shield appeared out of nowhere, like magic. The tentacle had swung hard trying to smash her but it looked like it had almost bounced off.

'That's not an ability since she has the beast taming ability, so it must be an active skill.' Quinn thought. 'It looks like a strong one as well, even though her clothes don't look like the usuals type of beast gear.'

Mona was cotherd in thin cloth, at first he thought it was just a fashion statement along with the hat, but it wasn't the case at all.

Next though, Mona, leapt up in the air dodging another tentacle swipe, which summoned up a wave of sand in the air, she was then soon hit from above with another, but it seemed like she was expecting it, as the purple shield had appeared above blocking that as well.

However, the force from the hit above was used, and as Mona allowed it to propel herself into the beast's other tentacle on the ground. Throwing out a fist, she had made impact to the tentacle piercing its skin causing black blood to fall. Soon she started to run up the tentacle.

Now the beast was weary, as it had felt pain, and was unable to attack Mona while running up it's arm. Instead it flung it's tentacle high trying to shake it off, but as it did, she lept off and hung onto another one.

“What in the world is she doing? That looks so scary!” Hana said with her mouth left open, it was strange it looked like a small human was going up against a god of the sea, and somehow she was able to avoid the giant tentacles while going from one to another, and hurting it along the way.

“Those world leaders wouldn’t get far with just their powers.” Eno started to explain. “Think about it, in their family they probably have many who have similar levels of ability, but what makes them different, allowing them to grow compared to others?”

“For Mona, she is fearless when in battle, and will do anything to control a beast stronger than herself. Watch carefully Sil. To use the tame ability, one must touch the beast on top of its head. However, if it’s too strong or your MC points are too low, then it will do nothing.

“You are able to weaken the beast, and hope to tame it once more, using your MC cells. Once a link is successful, then those MC cells you have used will be permanently lost in your body, connecting you and the beast at all times.

“However, there are some beasts that will just refuse to connect, but Hilston managed to tame the dragon, so you should be able to as well.”

Although Mona hadn’t damaged the beast much, she had tired it out, and it looked like soon, it would dive into the water. Seeing this, Mona then leapt onto the top of its large head, and made sure to dig one of her hands in its skin to hold on.

A few moments later and the waves started to settle, and the beast’s arms were lowering, they were no longer frantically moving about in the ocean. It looked like Mona had successfully captured a beast for herself.

While riding, its large head she slowly made her way to shore, and stopped. Lifting Mona off its head with its tentacle, it then placed her on the sand once again and she had a large grin on her face.

“After my last Demi-god tier beast was defeated, I thought I would never see one again, looks like I’m in luck.” She said, “Although, if it needs to be in the sea, it will be quite hard to move it, and use it outside of battle. I wonder if it can survive on land?”

“That was really impressive.” Layla said, as she had eyes of admiration. She couldn’t believe how fearless Mona was. “Your beast equipment, it seems to be at a high level to block the beast attacks, it must also be at the Demi-god tier level.”

Mona looked at Layla and was about to ignore her, but she had these large puppy dog eyes that nearly made it impossible for her to do so.

“My gear is impressive, but if I hadn’t used my active skill to block one of those attacks I would have been done for. I don’t usually like to do that type of thing, but after seeing it move like so, I thought I could do something and no Demi-god tier beast has never rejected my powers before, so really all I needed to do was get on top of its head.”

Saying all these things, just made Mona sound more impressive, and made Quinn wonder how many MC cells she must have to be able to control a Demi-god tier beast.

“Are you able to control a demon tier?” Quinn asked.

Mona took a while before answering the question.

“Well if that was the case, then we wouldn’t need this fella here would we. Honestly, I don’t know. I haven’t been lucky enough to ever meet one, but the person before me, who was once on this island, was said to have the same level of ability as mine.

“The one that Hilston took as a chained, and I don’t think she could control the beast you are looking for.”

It was hard to imagine how much of a difference a Demon tier beast really was compared to a Demi-god tier. In all honesty, the tier with the most varying powers of strength was the demon tier beast, because human’s hadn’t made a rank higher than that.

Perhaps one demon tier beast could be twice as strong as the other.

What Quinn did realise, was the fact that the ability Mona used, worked similar to his shadow eater skill. The weaker the vampire was the more chance the skill had of working, and this was the same with the beast.

'Let's just hope Sil can do this without us needing to fight it, then we don't need to find out how strong it is.' Quinn thought.

"This dragon is far stronger than that guard of a beast Quinn, I think you should prepare yourself, for a full on battle if need be." Eno said, as if he could read his mind.

My Vampire System Chapter 1115: The Tour of Blade

Leaving the sandy beach meant that Mona would have to leave her new beast that she had just tamed behind. She did a few tests with it, and called it up onto the land. This was when they realised the sheer size of the beast, as a giant shadow had been cast all over them.

The water had made it look a little smaller than they had all imagined.

However, it was clear to Mona and the rest, although it could stay out of the water, it couldn't move as fast nor did it look too well. The good news was, it meant that she could transport it and bring it along with her, but unless it is in the water it would be difficult to actually use it for combat purposes.

So in the end for now, Mona would leave it in the water, while keeping the connection with it. According to Mona, she could give it simple commands and although no words were communicated with the beast, she could tell how it was feeling. When giving commands, these feelings would be passed on and she generally knew what it wanted to communicate.

Now walking through the forest, most of them couldn't stop talking about Mona's actions against the beast.

"I can't believe I got to see one of the big four fights." Hana said. "She's an inspiration to us girls everywhere. I knew there had to be a reason beyond her ability. She was the only girl that was accepted into the big four."

"I always thought she would be more like a...like a witch." Chucky couldn't help but say. He hated to admit it, but he had judged a book by its cover.

'Those skills she used, they had nothing to do with her ability. She actually fought and swung, diving in against that beast on her own.' Layla thought. 'I hope maybe one day people can look up to me like that. I wonder if Quinn likes those types of girls.'

"Come on, if it was me, I would have just tied the beast's limbs up, piece of cake." Fex commented, while pulling back his hair, that had gotten a little wet in the fight.

"I could have blasted it with my thorns exploding them on impact, I wouldn't have had to even get close to the beast." Helen said as well.

"Ah yes, but then you two would have killed it, wouldn't you? But now I get to use it as I wish to help me by my side." Mona replied, hearing everything as they continued to walk through the jungle.

Eventually they started to come to a point in the jungle, where there were pathways leading to different areas, and they now had to choose where exactly to go.

"Whoa, is that a castle, it's like those really old style ones." Shiro said as he pointed towards the top of the hill it was based on. "Wait, Sil is from this place, right? So is this where you grew up?"

Sil didn't answer, of course he didn't because they weren't exactly pleasant memories that he had of this place, and Shiro noticing this now felt kind of bad. After all, they had only come to this place because the Blade's currently weren't here, and he had been told they weren't the best of people.

"Quinn." Sil finally said, as he lifted up his head. "Do you mind if we look around the place, see if there is anything before we head to the tablet. I just want to check if there is anything?"

"I assure you, I checked out the whole island before you got here. I even went to the large tablet where the dragon seems to be remaining." Brock said.

Even with that answer, it seemed like Sil wasn't satisfied.

"I think it will be okay." Quinn said. "After all, it doesn't look like the Dalki are here, maybe we jumped the gun, but I don't think a couple of hours looking around will hurt us. If it does, well then it just means we would be in an even worse situation fighting the Dalki and the Demon tier beast."

After hearing this, Sil's face lit up, and everyone else seemed to be fine with looking around the island. They were in no rush to face the Demon tier beast.

The first place that the group decided to stop at, due to it being close, was the Temple. It seemed to be still partly destroyed from when Vorden and Peter had fought here, against the others.

"What is this place, it looks like some type of school, and a fight broke out or something?" Helen said, as she looked at the giant hole through one of the doors.

"As you all know, the temple is no longer in use." Brock explained like he was some type of tour guide to the rest of them. "During my time here I witnessed everything that went on with the Blade island, those that were children of the Blade would learn their abilities and be sent here for training.

"Then when they had trained for long enough, they were faced against each other in a battle royal, until only one survived. The last one remaining, would be allowed to enter the castle."

Everyone was stunned by Brock words and how they were spoken so casually as if he was talking about a movie, but then realising that he was telling the truth, and noticing the blood marks in certain places they were devastated. They couldn't help but look at Sil in a different way.

Quinn wanted to stop Brock from speaking more, but Sil pulled him away.

"I can't run away from my past, it's okay, I need to be reminded, let him continue on." Sil said.

"Wait, so all those kids with the same ability as Sil, are you saying they came from here?" Chucky asked.

“Yeah, that’s right. Actually the one that wanted to save them all no matter what, was Vorden.” Quinn said. “And that’s why were going to get him back.”

Although some didn’t know who Vorden was or what they were talking about, it seemed like a sensitive matter so they chose to avoid it. They didn’t stay at the temple long, so the next place they went along to was the Castle.

As they entered they looked around at how grand and vast the whole place was. It seemed impossible for just a single family to live in such a huge place.

“As you are aware this is the Blade castle, where the main family members resided. I was under disguise as the head butler here, and was in charge of all the Blade servants that would work here.”

As they continued to follow Brock, he had eventually taken them down to the dungeon, but it wasn’t a typical dungeon. It was more of a large empty space, with hundreds of metal spikes that were dug into the floor.

“What...is this place?” Layla said as she looked in horror, all around her. It looked like a room that was designed for torture.

“This is what the Blade refers to as the chained. If you can’t guess, this is where they would chain up those ability users they thought were useful to them. Not only top abilities but unique original ones as well.

“Since the Blades could only copy so many abilities at once, they wished to overcome that weakness somehow, and this was what they had found. Still this was a temporary measure. It always seems like Hilston was searching for more, but he never did explain what it was.” Brock continued.

“You mean, even you don’t know why he did all this?” Quinn asked.

“Yes, I have no idea. Why he had created so many children with his own DNA, hoping to look for someone stronger than himself. It made no sense to me, and it was almost as if he was beyond obsessed.

“When Sil eventually appeared, that obsession died down a little, and instead he chose to go after Sil. I’m afraid, no matter where Sil is, eventually Hilston will try to find him.”

If this was the case, then Quinn needed to be ready for him. As they were to leave the dungeon, Mona stayed there for a few seconds. Her family members had also spent some time down there, and she couldn’t imagine how they must have felt.

‘I hope you’re still alive, and I promise I’ll pay back that man for what he did.’ Mona thought as she went out of the dungeon with the rest.

The last place left to visit in the castle was the throne room. Here they could see a large dining table. Sil remembered this table well, as it was where the family at all times had to eat together, pretending to be happy.

At the side of the room, at the very back, there seemed to be different pieces of a mannequin. One that just had a chest, others just a leg and so on, of every part of the human.

“What’s all this?” Fex asked, as he picked the mannequin that only resembled the chest of a human, which fell over instantly onto the floor. He quickly picked it up, just in case it was something important, and just gave a cheeky smile at the others.

“That was what was used to display Hilston’s Demon tier beast armour. He had managed to make a full set of it, from multiple crystals and at one point, had one of the best forgers in the world create it for him.

“That was until he had killed the forger shortly after, making it so no one else could create a set just like it.”

“A set of demon tier armour?” Mona replied, thinking she had misheard. “You mean it isn’t just a random demon tier beast equipment placed together, but an entire set? Did he come across a group of Demon tier beasts or something?”

“I don’t know the full details, as I wasn’t with him, but it was the most hurt I had ever seen Hilston before, and even his old Demon tier equipment seemed to be quite damaged.” Brock replied.

At that moment, everyone's body started to shiver as a natural response. Just how strong was Hilston, and was what Brock saying true? Back then, Hilston was never able to activate the Demon tier equipment he had used against Arthur, but what if he had? Would it have been a different story?

"Come on, we can't be that scared, Quinn and the other leaders managed to defeat him after all, you guys can just gather up and beat him again." Mona said, in a half joking way just to calm herself down.

"We weren't the one that beat him.." Quinn replied. "It was an old friend of mine...."

'A friend, I didn't hear of this, did he die, judging from how Quinn is speaking of him.' Mona thought.

Come, let's go to the tablet if there is nothing else here." Said Quinn.

My Vampire System Chapter 1116: Two problems at once

The giant stone tablet was located at the back of the castle which was partially built on a hill. However the tablet itself was even bigger than the castle, so it was pretty easy for them to see where they all needed to go next.

Currently, they were making a slow climb up the hill. The terrain was still quite green as they fought through the overgrown trees but at the same time a clear wide path could be seen, as if people had been here multiple times.

The reason why they were moving slowly, was due to the Demon tier beast that was said to be by the giant tablet.

"Why can't my body stop shaking, we haven't even reached the top yet?" Chucky asked, as his legs continued to feel weaker the closer they got.

“Many people are unable to handle the pressure of seeing a Demon tier beast with great power. Faced with one, they would just freeze up and would end up in their belly.” Brock explained. “However, in your case, I believe you are just worrying too much.”

The girls chuckled at Brock’s observation, but that didn’t change the fact that they too were a little worried. For they knew that the Dalki themselves that were so strong had come from this Demon tier beast, so they could somewhat imagine its poweress.

“I did say you didn’t have to come along.” Quinn reminded Chucky, as he turned and looked back.

Quinn and a few others were completely fine, unafraid, even Sil because they already knew this was something that needed to be done. “The castle looked like a safe place for you to stay at, that’s why I let Megan out and told her to stay there for now.” Quinn said.

“Come on!” Chucky shouted, as he punched his leg a few times, straightening it out and continued to walk forward. “I told you already, there’s no way I can miss this once in a lifetime opportunity! A tablet that might be the cause of why the whole world has their abilities, and a legendary Demon tier beast that guards it! I would regret it for the rest of my life if I hadn’t come along!”

On their way, Brock had spent a little time explaining why they were going after the tablet. Eno’s ability should allow them to transfer one of the tablet’s abilities into Shiro, who had never learned any other ability before.

What was troubling Quinn though was the senses in his body and head. Ever since they had gotten on the island, his body didn’t quite feel like it was working the way it should.

‘The same thing happened last time as well. If it wasn’t for this I wouldn’t have struggled so much to find where Peter had been on the island back then.’ He then went to turn to look at the others with him, but they didn’t seem to be feeling anything strange, even when looking at the other vampires.

‘Is it just affecting me then?’ Quinn wondered.

Finally, the hill started to level out, and the path was winding, but at this moment Brock, who had been leading the way so far, decided to stray from the path and enter the jungle itself. His footsteps were

almost silent, and everyone else followed him as well, and that's when they could see it. Not only that, but could hear a loud constant crackle, that would disappear going in and out.

A large open area... and the tablet in sight! Alas, that wasn't the only thing that was there. In front of it, they could make out the large black dragon, the crackling sound seemed to be coming from the Dragon due to it being asleep.

"So we have finally reached our goal, and both of them are in front of us, but this brings us to quite the troubling predicament." Logan stated in a quiet tone.

"Indeed, since we hadn't seen the dragon in any other areas, I assumed that it might be here, but I was really hoping that it wasn't." Brock sighed.

Heading away from the edge of the green area, they walked further into the jungle, hiding from the beast, while they decided what to do next.

"I think this whole thing is quite simple. Sil has already copied everyone's abilities." Eno said. "So he should be able to just walk up to the beast and tap it on its head, attempting to control it. If it works then we can move it away from the area."

It seemed like the obvious choice, especially if they wanted to avoid fighting, but Quinn had a different idea.

"No." Quinn argued against it. "Eno, you need to complete your part of the deal first. For one, we don't even know if that tablet has abilities in it, much less the ability that we actually need. I want you to pass the ability onto Shiro first, and once we know we can bring back Vorden and Raten, then we will move the dragon as you wish."

After saying these words, Quinn stared directly into Enos' eyes, and the Original stared back. The others started to move away as they were afraid that a fight might break out any second now.

"Do you understand how important this beast is?" Eno questioned, the look on his face for once changing into sheer annoyance.

“And do you understand how important my friends are to me?” Quinn replied, unwilling to take a single step back. “Or has the lack of having any distorted your mind, old man?!”

“Whoah, Quinn is being a bit feisty, don’t ya think?” Fex whispered over to Layla, but she paid less attention to what was being said, instead concentrating on Eno, ready to jump if he made any sudden moves at Quinn, prepared to use the chain lock skill to hold the old man down.

In a similar fashion, Borden had leapt onto Sil’s shoulder as well, pounding his fist. It was clear that no one other than Brock was on his side.

“... Fine, have it your way. I did promise you that I would help after all, but I still think the easiest way is for us to have Sil move the beast.” Eno conceded eventually.

“Perhaps, but you can’t fault me for having trust issues regarding you given your history. We still need to build on our relationship.” Quinn said with a smile, that he was sure was going to annoy the old man, but he just ignored it and continued on.

“Now that we have decided to try to reach the tablet first, that still doesn’t help with our first problem.” Logan pointed out. “The dragon is in the way of the tablet, and although we can sneak past it, it will be a disaster if that fails, and there is a very high likelihood of it somehow being able to sense us, once we are closer to it.”

“How about a distraction?” Helen suggested. “One group will make some noise in the vicinity. Once the Demon tier beast chases after them, another group goes to the giant tablet.”

“I think the lady has made a fine suggestion.” Eno agreed. “It will take me a few moments to complete the transfer, so it would be best if the beast was taken as far away from the tablet as possible.”

After much discussion the group had decided that they would be split up into two. One would be the distraction of the Demon tier beast, while the other would protect Shiro and Eno while they were doing their tasks.

This team needed to be equally strong, as they were worried that as soon as Eno touched the tablet or if they were noticed, the dragon could possibly sense it and return. Chucky and Hana, since they were only

there to provide powers for Sil where to remain in the Jungle area, as they were still persistent they didn't want to go in Quinn's shadow.

The group that would be working to protect Shiro and Eno consisted of Brock, Sil, Borden and Helen, while the distraction group included Quinn, Mona, Logan, Fex and Layla. Before leaving, Quinn tapped Shiro's shoulder and activated his shadow on, in case of an emergency situation.

"Sil, if you see anything suspicious coming from the two of them, I'm counting on you. I know how strong you are, and how much you don't like Eno." Quinn whispered.

"You know with age my hearing doesn't get any worse, I can hear just as well as you." Eno commented.

The group went back to where they were originally, so they could peak through the greenery and stepping out was the distraction group. The reason Quinn wanted to be part of the distraction group was because he was worried about just how strong this Demon tier beast might be.

Stepping forward, when they were around 100 meters away from the beast, Layla placed her arrow into her bow, and stretched it as far as she could.

"Should I use Qi?" She asked.

"We need to get it annoyed so go ahead." Quinn replied.

She let go, and her powerful arrow was sent flying filled with energy, and was going right for its front leg that was covering part of its face. As it hit, the tip was stuck on the hard skin and the wooden part of the arrow seemed to callpose in on itself breaking it, as the force carried forward, but hadn't pierced the skin at all.

'What the, I used quite a bit of my Qi. The same amount that destroyed the training room wall, but it can't even pierce it's skin.' Layla was flabbergasted.

Since it had done no damage, they were unsure if it was enough, but they didn't want to get any closer, they needed a head start if they were to stand any chance of avoiding a full on confrontation. Seeing the

arrow didn't work, Quinn stepped forward, and instantly, the eyelid of the beast opened, and a sharp shaped yellow eye could be seen.

"I think it's awake now!" Fex shouted, as he had already started to run away.

My Vampire System Chapter 1117: The strongest beast yet

Although it might have looked as if Fex had just fled at the first sign of the Demon tier beast waking up, the vampire had done something before his strategic retreat. He had carefully timed it so his red aura string would shoot out wrapping around the dragon's legs, buying the rest of them additional time.

While running, he was also leaving behind several needles on the ground with string attached to them. As long as he used his blood control, he could make the string rise and wrap around the beast's legs.

Unfortunately, the effectiveness of that was vastly limited. As soon as the dragon stood up on all of its four legs, it immediately snapped as if it wasn't even there in the first place.

"These days as the beasts we fight get stronger and stronger, it's like my string is becoming more and more useless. Isn't there any way to increase its strength?" Fex wondered, but now was clearly the wrong time to think about anything but the Demon tier beast on their heels.

Fex wasn't the only one who had gotten a head start. Logan had made sure to stay further in the back, already equipped with his speed suit, and had passed Fex on his left.

From the higher tier beast crystals he had been able to upgrade his three different types of suits, and his speed suit had improved significantly, but there was one thing different about it. The spiders that had transformed into the suit had done so around every part of his body except for his Dalki arm, leaving it in place.

Soon after standing up the Dragon let out an almighty roar that felt like it had the power to shake the entire island. At least the ground beneath their feet had started to vibrate and they had no choice but to cover their sensitive ears as they felt like they were going to burst.

The pain they experienced from that single roar alone had been sufficient to make them collapse on the floor for a few seconds, even those that had run away quite a distance already.

“Hey, kid!” Mona shouted as one of the few that hadn’t started running yet. “You wanted to find out if I can control that thing, right? If I succeed then we won’t even need the help of the blonde boy, so throw me out!”

Quinn was still recovering from the effects of the roar, and had already summoned his shadow to defend him, on top of everything he had the suit of armour that had been gifted to him by Helen, which improved his speed greatly.

He had stayed behind for two reasons. One, in case the dragon would have continued to guard the tablet instead of chasing after them, and to chase after them, he would need to do more, and two, he was the fastest out of everyone there so he could cover the most ground.

Yet Mona, who was quite fast with her beast gear on, had just asked to be thrown towards the dragon.

“Are you crazy, that thing will eat you up!” Quinn argued.

“Just throw me, you wimp!” Mona shouted back. “Don’t hold back on your strength! As long as you throw me fast enough, I’ll be able to make it to the beast! “

Quinn thought this to be the craziest idea he had ever heard, but there was one thing that made him consider it for the moment, and that was the system. Why hadn’t the system given him a quest yet?

This was a Demon tier beast, sure it didn’t seem like it had any special abilities like the Demon tier tree, but this was clearly a powerful thing, so why didn’t it give him any type of quest, even one to survive.

It seemed like the dragon was still gathering its bearings, and Mona was already by Quinn’s side ready to be thrown.

'With the new gauntlet strength I can do it!' Quinn thought, as he picked up Mona by her two feet with one hand, and then pushed her forward as hard as he could. The veins were popping from his neck, and he made sure to continue with all 200+ stats of his Strength, to push through till the end with his fingertips.

'You asked me to throw you as hard as possible, then I'll do just that!'

Even Mona, had never expected to be launched at such a speed, and so far forward, the G-force was hitting her like crazy.

'That damn boy, just how strong is he to have such inhuman strength?!' She thought. 'Oh that's right, the boy isn't human anymore.'

In an instant she had been launched at the large dragon's neck, and with her hands she held onto one of the dragon's scales. The force from the throw was so strong that she needed to grip onto the scale tight to not fly further. Her fingertips felt like they were slipping.

'Damn you Quinn, that was a bit too fast and hard!' She thought as she finally pulled herself onto the dragon's neck just under its head.

Then quickly acting fast, she pulled herself up onto the dragon and was now on its head.

"Let's see what I can do!" Mona hyped herself up as she touched the beast on top of its head with an open palm.

"Whoa is she really going to control it?" Chucky thought, as they continued to watch everything from what they perceived to be a safe distance. Perhaps there wasn't a need for the plan after all.

However, all of that changed a few seconds later, as soon as Mona activated her ability. She had used it dozens of times, but this time something unexpected happened. A shooting pain went straight to her head, and her vision was turning black. She had passed out within seconds and was now falling off the dragon to the ground.

'Falling from such a height unconscious will kill her!' Hana thought, as she looked over to the original team to see if they could do something to help her, but they knew there was no need, because the best person to help her was already closeby.

Before she touched the ground a shadow portal had opened and Mona's falling body quickly disappeared inside, now in the shadow space.

'You're a brave person. I understand why you were a World Leader and you had so many people following you. Maybe I can be the same.' Quinn thought, as he looked the dragon in the eye.

Using all his strength, Quinn threw out his arms in an X shape and fired off two large blood swipes which went straight for the dragon. Unfazed, the dragon started to run towards Quinn, not caring for the attack.

However, as it hit the dragon's upper body, where its chest area was, it could feel something for a few seconds, before the attack went away.

"Did it work?!" Chucky exclaimed excitedly.

However, when looking at the dragon, the beast looked absolutely fine.

'How can its skin be as hard as the Diamond crab? I thought since this was just half a Demon tier beast it might be a bit weaker.'

After it had stopped for a few moments, seemingly surprised it had been able to slightly feel the attack, it resumed its charge towards Quinn. Each step was heavy, and shook the whole place. Seeing such a colossal beast charging forward, Quinn no longer tried to fight it, but made use of his great speed.

He was glad that the others had taken the chance to get a head start, for the beast was fast despite its size.

'I need to slow it down, or it will catch up to the others as well.' Quinn thought as he turned and activated his shadow path skill.

It went out spreading on the ground, wider than usual, but as long as it hit one of the dragon's legs it should slow it down, but it was at that moment that it leaped in the sky, avoiding the shadow completely, and was now flying up high in the air.

"... Was I the only one who forgot dragons could do that?" Fex asked, but judging from the silence and the blank faces of those next to him, he wasn't. 'I mean just because a creature has large wings doesn't mean they can always use them.'

With its targets locked on, the dragon was ready to punish whoever had disturbed its sleep. The group continued to run, and as Quinn went by the others, Layla hopped on Quinn's back.

With his Strength, she was practically weightless, and she could continue to fire arrows up high in the sky at the beast. She tried to aim for it's eye, but a flap of it's powerful wings would make the arrows useless.

"Any ideas on how we're going to beat this thing?" Fex asked.

"Remember, our goal isn't to beat it, but just to buy time for the other group." Logan said. "So far, I think we have achieved our goal."

Their distraction group had successfully lured it away from the tablet and if its desire to punish them wouldn't have been enough to make it follow them, Layla continuing to harass it with arrows certainly did the job.

Quinn just hoped they could keep this up without anyone getting hurt.

"Looks like it's our time to move." Eno said and everyone in their group hurried towards the tablet, aware that time was of the essence. The longer they took the higher the likelihood of casualties in the other group.

“Shiro, you need to press with both your hands. I will do the same. Don’t worry if you feel a strange sensation in your body, that’s just the MC cells inside your body adapting to the ability.” Eno instructed. “Now, let’s see if the ability we’re looking for really is in here.”

The two of them pressed their hands on the tablet, and Eno quickly began to search for the ability. It took some time, but a smile appeared on his face as he found it.

“Bingo, looks like we are in luck! It’s time to give you your ability.”

At the same time, as this process was going on, the distraction group had noticed that the Dragon had turned its head, and it was looking right in the direction of the tablet.

“Crap! We have to stop it from getting back to the tablet, no matter what!” Quinn shouted.

My Vampire System Chapter 1118: The active power

A little while before Quinn and the others arrived at Blade Island, there was a certain question that had been on their minds. ‘If the Demon tier beast was so important to the Dalki, then wouldn’t it be better to just kill it?’.

If they managed to kill the beast or at least one half of it, wouldn’t that stop the Dalki from prolonging their life? Wouldn’t it turn into a ‘simple’ waiting game for the human race? All they would have to do would be to outlast the Dalki until they would die by reaching the end of their lifespans!

However, according to Richard Eno, doing so was practically impossible. In the first place the Demon tier beast used to be a two headed dragon, which had the ability to split itself into two. This was what it had done when originally fighting against the vampires.

Naturally the vampires had done their utmost to kill it, but all attempts had ultimately ended in failure. It seemed that the only way to kill the beast was to either kill both halves at the same time, or it needed to die when it combined into a whole again.

Unfortunately, the beast would always split into two halves when it was on the verge of dying and then flee in opposite directions. Even after managing to kill either half, the other had somehow been able to sprout its second head.

In the end, they had just captured the one half, without killing it.

— —

All of these thoughts were currently running through Quinn's head as he saw the dragon turn towards the tablet. He was reminded that even if they were able to kill the beast then, there was no guarantee the other half of it in the Vampire World wouldn't regain consciousness and become whole once again.

'Still, this beast is too dangerous, and I have to stop it somehow!' Quinn thought, but the dragon was high up in the air.

"Quinn!" Fex called out. "Follow me."

As quick as he could, Fex threw his needles into the trees and also made sure pieces of string were left behind so they could be used as platforms. Quinn quickly followed until he reached the top of the tallest tree.

Layla was still riding on Quinn's back, but even from this distance it didn't look like she could reach the dragon with her arrows.

"Quinn, let me give you a boost!" Logan shouted, as he quickly followed after the two of them.

"Drop me!" Layla requested. "Fex will catch me!"

Everything was happening so fast but he needed to trust his teammates. Doing a small jump, Quinn was in the air for a few seconds before he landed on Logan's Dalki hand. Then with all the strength Logan could muster, he threw Quinn as hard as he could, while Quinn also pushed off kicking from his feet.

Even with Logan's strong Dalki hand, his whole body was flung backwards as a result.

"Damn you guys for making me do so much work!" Fex complained as he quickly used his string to grab his two falling friends. Layla hadn't even looked behind, instead stretching out her hand toward Quinn.

'I know it won't be much, but I'll do what I can to help you reach that dragon as well.' Layla thought, as she pushed herself to the point where all her MC cells ran out.

Quinn looked like a shooting star through the sky, but there was one giant problem. He couldn't exactly change his direction mid-flight and the dragon was slowly turning its body away.

'It's about to fly off, I have to do something!' Quinn thought and extended his shadow to latch onto the dragon's tail. By shrinking it afterward he was eventually able to reach the Dragon's back.

'I have to figure out a way to slow it down somehow.' Quinn thought. 'Or make it plummet down. Wait I second, can't I do that?!' He looked at his white gauntlet on his hand and pressed it down.

—

Back at the tablet, the process had been completed and Shiro was standing there looking at his hands in shock. "It's... over already? Is it really done? I don't feel a difference yet!"

"That isn't too surprising, I practically added a part to you that you have yet to become familiar with. Normally, you would have an ability book to guide you, but since we have neither that nor someone who could teach it to you, I'm afraid you will have to undergo quite a bit of self discovery. It will depend on your talent as to how fast you will be able to help your little friend there." Eno explained.

Shiro looked at Sil and smiled. "Come on, let's give it a go." He said excitedly, as he reached out towards Sil, but soon his hand was knocked away.

"No." Eno said. "Just like I held up my part of the deal, Sil needs to hold up his as well. He needs to move the dragon first. Your little actions could possibly make it so Sil goes back to the way he once was."

“Brother, look above!” Borden shouted as he pointed towards the sky, and that’s when they could see a dragon coming their way. However, it wasn’t flying straight towards them, instead it seemed to be flying... drunk?

It flew in circles upside down, and then left to right as it made its way towards them. It would have been hilarious to see if that monstrosity wasn’t coming closer with each passing second, despite its questionable style.

“Everyone move!” Brock shouted, and it didn’t take long for all of them to split. A few seconds later, the dragon smashed into the ground where they all had just stood, throwing up dust and dirt everywhere.

Fex, with the others, had already been in pursuit of the flying beast. Despite its giant size and ferociousness, they were all worried about Quinn. As for the person in question. When the dragon had crashed, Quinn had tried his best to hold on but the force of impact had thrown him quite a distance off.

‘Damn, I think my plan worked out a little too well, and this energy I’m feeling inside me, it’s so wild and strong.’ Quinn looked at his hand.

While on the beast, Quinn had come up with one of two plans. Plan A had been to attack the dragon repeatedly, until it would eventually become poisoned through gauntlets’ passive. The problem with this was the hard skin the dragon seemed to have. He had been unsure he would have been able to succeed in time before the dragon had reached the tablet.

As such he had gone with Plan B, which had been to use his other gauntlet’s active skill, the energy drain. He didn’t think it would work so fast or well, but he also had nothing to lose by trying it.

At first, Quinn had felt his whole body return to peak condition. He hadn’t used much of his stamina so far, but what little he had, had been refilled. After that though, his body had entered into some type of overdrive as more energy was flowing into him, the energy of the beast itself.

At first Quinn didn’t think it was having much of an effect, but being powered up, he thought he could at least deal a large significant blow to it, but then something strange started to occur.

The dragon had started to spiral out of control, as if it was doing anything it could to get Quinn off its back. Most likely it was experiencing something it had never felt before, its power being sucked away, so it had wanted to get rid of the tick responsible.

In the end, the two of them had crashed together and Quinn got chucked off to the side. He was in the middle of making a recovery getting up, and when the others had arrived from the other direction, they could see the dragon, creeping towards Quinn with its large head moving towards him, fury clearly written on its maw.

Quinn backed up a few steps, and realised that the tablet was behind him and that's when something strange happened, the dragon stopped in its tracks and stayed there. It blew out air through its nostrils which hit Quinn like a wave of great heat.

'What's going on, why isn't it moving closer? Why did it stop its attack?' Quinn wondered. The good news was, it didn't look like it was going after any of the others as well and was just continually staring at Quinn.

He took a few steps to the left and the dragon's eyes followed after him, ignoring the others. He then took a few steps to the right and it did the same.

"Why, aren't you attacking me?" Quinn asked, thinking the dragon could answer, but it couldn't. For it was nothing but a beast. The others watching were wondering what to do as well. Was this the perfect opportunity to attack it all together or should they let it go?

Turning around, and feeling the strange energy he felt before Quinn realised , that maybe, just maybe everything had something to do with the tablet.

'Is that why it doesn't attack? Is it worried about destroying it?' Quinn thought, as he walked up to it. He was scared to turn his back on the dragon at first, as he turned his head around a couple of times, but it looked like it wasn't going to move anytime soon.

"Just what is going on, I need to find out." Quinn mumbled, as he pressed both hands against the tablet and then the whole tablet began to light up.

My Vampire System Chapter 1119: A family reunion

As soon as Quinn laid his hands on the tablet, it began to shine in a bright blue colour, lighting up the place around them. The others were in shock about all the things happening. First the dragon, a beast that was known for its violent nature to kill anything in sight, had not attacked Quinn and now this.

The reason why they were so surprised was because even when Eno had touched the tablet to grant Shiro his abilities, nothing of the sort had occurred. Logan and the others had reunited with the other group in the jungle. They had a good view of things since the dragon wasn't blocking their vision.

Logan looked at Eno for a possible explanation, but the look on the old man's face was genuine. For once, he was as clueless as everyone else.

Quinn continued to leave his hands on the tablet, as an energy he felt was connecting with him from the inside.

'This feeling... It was so disturbing at first, but now it helps me keep calm. But why does it feel so familiar? Is this how everyone feels when they touch the tablet?' Quinn wondered since he hadn't been there to witness Eno before. 'I guess nothing will happen though since I already have an ability.'

"This young one already has power, and he is unlike the man from before, so there is nothing he can gain from me here." Quinn heard a voice that he was unable to recognise.

Turning his head around, Quinn was looking for where the voice had come from, but everyone was just looking at him, none of them had uttered so much as a single word. The voice echoed a bit, similar to when Jill would send him messages via the telepathy ability, so he tried to direct his thoughts at the tablet. 'Who are you?'

"You... you can hear me?" The voice asked in shock.

'Damn it, it's like speaking to Vincent all over again!' Quinn thought in mild annoyance. All those around him continued to watch him. It was clear to him that he was the only one able to perceive this voice.

"I don't know who this Vincent is, but you're the first one I'm able to converse with." The voice replied, now curious why that was the case.

It seemed like just like with Vincent, that the voice had access to his thoughts while he was touching the tablet. Since Quinn had only been able to hear the voice after touching the tablet, he could only assume it was either the tablet itself or someone or something left inside it.

'Are you the tablet?' Quinn asked as it was the fastest way to find out, instead of racking his brain.

"Do you really think tablets can speak or were you just born like this?" The voice asked in derision. Listening to it for a bit it sounded as if it might belong to a middle aged man, not too old nor too young.

"No, the tablet is merely a tool. I don't know how much you know, but all the abilities that humans currently possess originally came from me. At one point I decided that my time was up, and my final gift to the world was this. My mortal body should have long since perished, but I never expected to still be somewhat conscious when I gave up everything to be placed inside of here."

It was pretty hard for a person to believe, but Quinn had read the diaries of Arthur and heard Eno's explanation. All the abilities supposedly had come from this tablet, and now Quinn was hearing the voice inside confirm pretty much that to be the truth.

'Are you some type of god? How did you leave the world with so many abilities? Did you really come up with every ability, even the shadow ability I possess?' Quinn wondered.

For the first time the tablet seemed to pause before answering.

"Shadow ability? I'm afraid I did not possess such an ability, but someone I knew back in the past did. You must have received it from him somehow. As to your question, no I am not a god, although I managed to become far stronger than any of the gods during my time." The man started to laugh.

This made him seem to be quite the arrogant person in Quinn's eyes. While it was interesting to talk with him, he really didn't know how much this person could help him. Perhaps it was time to think of a

way to deal with the dragon. It might have stopped its attack because of the tablet, but there was no guarantee it wouldn't revert to a wild beast, once they were further away from it.

"Wait!" The tablet spoke out. "While I have your attention I must tell you something very important! Leave that dragon be. That dragon, it came here on its own. Weak at first, but its energy slowly recovered. It must have been attracted to the energy of the tablet without realising it. However, now that he has mostly recovered, I've been able to communicate with it somewhat. Maybe because we are similar..."

"For now, the dragon has agreed to protect the stone tablet. You see if the tablet gets destroyed then that also means that all abilities will be lost. The way the system has been set up, the tablet will grant people a suitable ability. When the last person with that ability dies, then it gets sent back to the tablet. Then it will be passed on to a new person who is suitable for that power."

"However, if the tablet gets destroyed, then there is no place for the ability to come back to, do you understand? Earth has gone on a long time without trouble and in doing so it has forgotten its roots, its powers, so this is the only way."

He understood, but Quinn now had a new problem. They had come here to move the dragon beast so the Dalki would be unable to find him, but at the same time, it seemed like the tablet was of utmost importance to humanity. While the dragon was one thing, the tablet would be near impossible to move. The better option would be to protect this island at all costs.

"Honestly, you wouldn't be able to defeat the dragon even if you tried." The voice in the tablet said. "I assume you being here means you know a bit about this island, but not even the man who was here before had a way to control him. I don't have complete control over the dragon either, but at least it listens to me somewhat. Although it's hard to say how much he listens to me and how much he just instinctively chooses to hunt down intruders on the island."

"I know you are young so you might think you are strong and invincible, but believe me you are not strong enough to deal with it. If you try and force the dragon to move elsewhere then I will be unable to help you. You can be sure that it will fight you with its full force!"

'The dragon hasn't been taking us seriously yet?!' Quinn was shocked. 'If that's the case then it's no wonder how the Dalki could be made from the dragon.'

What was even more amazing was that the vampires had somewhat managed to defeat it. It made him wonder what type of forces had been sent out by vampires to deal with the beast.

'I was wondering, since you seem to have been this all powerful special being and all, can you help us? I mean, you gave everyone the excuse that you wanted to save them. Right now, we're in serious trouble and it might end up with the extinction of the human race, so is there perhaps anything you can do to help me?'

For the second time the tablet paused again.

"I'm afraid there is not. You already have an ability so I cannot give you another. I was born strong so there is nothing for me to teach you in terms of skills, magic or the sort. The only thing I can give you is information, but I fear my information stems from so far back that it would hardly help you. What I can do is convince my scaly friend to let you pass unharmed though."

It was a bit upsetting in a way. Usually with such a big event, a big discovery Quinn had expected something more. An opportunity to obtain some rare powers, but if there was nothing that could be done, then he would just be happy with the 'get away from the angry dragon' card.

'Why did you choose to speak to me?' Quinn asked, before letting go of the tablet.

"I didn't choose to speak to you. There was a reaction when you touched the tablet. It has never happened before. As I said, you are the first person to be able to hear my voice. As to why you? Your guess is as good as mine."

Quinn didn't know what really came over him at that moment or what answer he had been expecting, but he had thought that maybe there would be something to it. Perhaps he had read too many fantasy books about a Chosen One, or a prophecy that needed to be fulfilled to vanquish the evil of the world, but it was nothing like that.

"Before you go, I would like to ask you for one last thing. Since you're the first person who I have been able to speak to, it would seem rude to not even learn your name." The tablet requested.

'My name's Quinn...Quinn Talen.'

“That name....it’s a very good name.” The tablet replied. Quinn had the feeling it had more to say, but it had apparently chosen to keep those secrets to himself. Alas, there was nothing he could do to pry it open.

Letting go of the tablet, the bright light dimmed down until it eventually disappeared. Quinn turned to the others and now he had one more thing to do. Somehow, he needed to convince Eno that moving the dragon wasn’t the best choice.

My Vampire System Chapter 1120: A third body is needed

Naturally, Quinn had also wondered about the name of the mysterious ‘being’ he had been talking to. With how boastful the voice had been earlier, it was actually quite surprising that he hadn’t introduced himself. However, the tone of the other’s voice after Quinn had introduced himself, had made it clear that the conversation between the two was over.

There had been no way for the others to hear what had just been going on. They had only seen Quinn place his hands on the tablet, it lighting up, and after a while he had let go.

Walking away, the dragon continued to survey Quinn with its eyes, but the vampire felt far less nervous. The voice in the tablet had seemingly kept his word and the dragon didn’t attack him.

The others could see how calm Quinn was walking over to where they were, so eventually they came out to meet him, worried that the dragon might suddenly change its mind.

“Quinn, are you okay? Did you hurt yourself when you fell from the dragon?” Layla asked immediately, and Helen soon stepped forward as well, but both of them were a little frozen in place, for they could see the large dragon’s head staring at their group. It didn’t do anything else, but the gaze was enough to tell them that it wanted them gone.

“I’m not hurt, you don’t have to worry about that, but there are a few things I need to explain.” Quinn said and shared the details of the conversation that he just had with the person in the tablet. He didn’t

leave out any details either, as he saw no need to. The group gave a few odd looks here and there, but they certainly didn't think it was completely impossible.

Case in point the Demon tier beast, that was tolerating their conversation.

"Someone with so many abilities had to have been one of the strongest beings in existence. In history we never learnt of such a person." Logan stated. "If he really did have all those abilities, then what you are saying and what this person has done shouldn't be too much of a surprise. However, the only thing I can't understand is why did he choose to speak to you?"

Unfortunately, this was something that Quinn had no idea about, although he would have loved to know.

"We've managed to get to the stone tablet and grant Shiro the ability, so I would like to suggest that we listen to the 'being' and leave the dragon where it is for now." Quinn said. "I don't see any reason for him to lie to me. Honestly, with how powerful only one small part of the energy I absorbed from it was, I don't wish to fight it. If we try to make it move, some of us might get seriously hurt or outright perish. Besides, since the Dalki know about this island, they might destroy everything on it trying to look for the beast, including the stone tablet."

"You're really going to listen to some strange voice you heard in your head?" Eno asked as he stepped out of the trees. "You do understand the consequences of Jim getting his hand on the Dragon, right? He will be able to create even more Dalki, everlasting beings that could wipe out everything this whole universe has to offer!"

Taking one step too close to Quinn, the dragon moved slightly forward and now its large head was hovering over the Cursed faction leader. It was no longer looking at all of them as a group, but its yellow eyes were now directly staring at Eno, perceiving him as an intruder. It was so close to Quinn that he could feel the heat radiating from its large body from his back.

"Is he controlling it, like the same ability that Mona has?" Chucky wondered.

"That would make Quinn the first person to have more than one ability." Hana shouted back as if it was an obvious answer. "I, for one, believe he's told us the truth this whole time! Why would he suddenly

make up having talked to a being if he had the power to control it the whole time? That voice must have told the dragon to protect Quinn for now.”

Still, despite the large dragon being behind Quinn’s back, it didn’t look like Eno was going to back down, or at least he wasn’t afraid.

“It looks like this is the second time today, that I will have to concede to you, but hear my warning, Quinn. Humanity’s sake is no longer just in my hands. Now you hold a large enough position of power that you will have to play your part in all of this as well.” Eno pointed at Quinn.

“We still need to figure out some things.” Quinn mentioned, with the dragon backing away. Sensing no more hostility from Eno he returned to his role as an annoyed observer. “Just as the voice said, the tablet is one of the most important things here, and if the Dalki come here we need to protect this place!”

“Eno, I was hoping that we could use your army to station a few here, so they could inform us whenever there will be trouble. We can try to build a teleporter, but that might not work. However the good thing is, the island is on earth, so any attack should be spotted before they come here giving us enough time.”

Eno didn’t give Quinn an answer nor did he show any signs he was going to agree. He was a stubborn old man after all, but by now Quinn knew him long enough that he would at least do this much, especially since he would have an interest in keeping on the dragon at all costs.

“Can I request something?” Logan asked. “Since the dragon seems to be a bit tamer compared to before, do you think we can attempt to take some samples from it? I wish to use its blood to try and create more serums for little Borden.”

“I mean I can try.” Quinn thought, as he went back and placed his hands on the tablet once more. Unfortunately for some reason nothing had happened. The Tablet didn’t light up like last time, and he was starting to wonder if he had gone mad just seconds ago. Until...

[New quest received]

[Learn more of your past and return to this place once more]

[Learn of the Talen families history]

'Huh?' Quinn thought the last thing he had expected was the system to give him some type of quest. After all, what did his family's history have anything to do with the tablet?

"I guess we can try and see if something will work?" Quinn said nervously looking at the dragon.

"I don't mind staying here for a couple of days, we can use the castle as a base." Shiro suggested. "And I can use that time to try to learn how to use this ability. It looks like it will be a while before I'll be able to help out Sil anyway."

After much discussion, they had decided a few things. Eno had agreed that he would send a few of his 'own' vampires here, and they would look after the place, keeping them updated on any changes to the island. In the meantime, Shiro would practice the use of his ability, at least sensing how to use it, since Eno was keeping a close eye on him and Sil.

Lastly, Logan was busy trying to extract a few samples from the dragon. Now that there was no longer a misunderstanding between them and the beast, Logan was able to extract a sample, directly from inside the Dragon's mouth.

Of course, he hadn't done it alone. Since it seemed to have been instructed to protect Quinn, or taken a liking to him, Logan had asked Quinn for his cooperation. The beast had turned out to be smart enough to understand that they wanted and after an annoyed puff of air through his nostrils he had opened its snout.

Quinn entered the dragon's mouth first. When they saw it didn't shut on him, Logan came over. This was one of the few areas that didn't have its hard scales that seemed unbreakable, otherwise Logan would have never been able to get a sample.

Meanwhile, the rest had decided to rest inside the castle. They felt far more safe, staying away from the Demon tier beast. Heading over to the large canteen, Quinn had decided to pay Logan a visit, who was currently using it as a lab.

“I hope everything is going okay.” Quinn asked. “Don’t worry once Eno comes here with his people, we can head back to the Cursed ship. I know there is only so much you can do here.”

The frustration on Logan’s face was visible, because he had gained something that he had been looking for, for so long, yet none of the equipment to properly look at it, so he felt far more impatient compared to the others.

“If you’re not busy and have nothing to do, can you carry on with that request of mine from earlier? We need to keep looking, and hopefully by then Shiro will have mastered the ability somewhat.” Quinn said.

“Are you planning to go behind Eno’s back then? If we find what you are looking for before moving the beast?” Logan asked.

“You have to remember, if this works the way I think it works, then Sil will still have all of his abilities in place.” Quinn answered before he left to check up on how Shiro was doing.

While walking over there he did have a thought in his head about Shiro’s new ability.

‘If Shiro is able to extract minds, or spirits whatever it is and place them into other bodies for Borden and Raten, does that mean something can be done for Vincent as well. It would be nice to get you out of my head.’

Vincent seemed silent about this request, because he honestly didn’t know how to feel. He had already made peace with the world and spending time watching over Quinn had been a pleasure he couldn’t have imagined to get.

‘It would be nice to speak to you person to person.’ Vincent replied.

My Vampire System Chapter 1121: Lumped together

For a long time, the tension hadn't been quite the same in a particular shelter. A shelter that looked unusual compared to others, for the houses, people and shops lived high above the trees. However, if one was to look at all the people walking around, none of them had a smile on their face.

Instead, their faces showed great concern. If they had the choice, they would try their best to stay inside in their homes. At the moment, many people were outside, and this was due to a meeting that was to take place in one of the larger houses.

It was the highest house in the Shelter and also the largest. Using the bridges that would take them from one platform to the other, a group of people were now heading their way there. Inside the place, the leader of everyone, who was named Ruby, stood on a small raised wooden platform.

She had dark coloured skin and curly hair that was braided down to her waist. She stood there holding a spear with the head of it stuck into the ground. As the room was getting filled, mumbling between everyone started already.

"What are they even doing here? Do we know yet?"

"I can't sleep well at night knowing that they are just right outside our doors."

"But they don't seem to be attacking us. Has there been some type of deal that has been set up? And they have been here a while without saying much at all."

"And where is Arthur, wasn't he meant to protect us from things like this?"

"Silence!" Ruby shouted, her voice carrying loud over everyone. After hearing that name, she immediately wanted to end the discussion there.

"I know everyone is scared, worried and has a lot of questions on their mind. The worry has only been building up, it feels like we can't catch a break, and everyone who we have ever trusted has abandoned us."

As soon as Ruby started to speak, the rest immediately shut up. The way Ruby spoke, she took control of the room in an instant with her voice.

“The Dalki, I don’t really know why they are here. The human race has been at war with them for so long, we have learnt that they are the enemy, but we have seen what they have done so far.” Ruby continued. “The beasts that regularly attack us, they have for some reason defended us. They have stayed near our borders of the Shelter but haven’t harmed a single one of us.”

Saying all this, Ruby had to pause, and her fist could be seen tensing over the spear.

“But they are the enemy. How many of us have known someone that lost their lives in the first war. I know the army abandoned us, but we wouldn’t be in this place if they never attacked us!” A man shouted and argued, and it looked like a lot of them agreed.

“I know!” Ruby shouted again, silencing them all once more. “But tell me, do you all trust Arthur? He told us that no matter what, they will protect us from whatever is to come whatever the outcome of the war...”

While she said these words, her voice cracked a little, and they realised that the one person this had to affect most of all, was her. Knowing this fact, if Ruby could put up with the Dalki being here, then they could as well.

“As long as the Dalki do not harm us, then I think that we should leave them-“Just as she was about to finish her sentence, the whole room started to shake, and a loud bang was heard from the outside.

Immediately they all grabbed their spears and started to rush outside the world.

“I knew that the Dalki would eventually attack. We have to defend ourselves at all costs.”

“It might just be a beast. They have been coming more often lately.” Another one said.

Ruby knew that this wasn't an attack from the beast nor the Dalki. It sounded more like someone had fired a type of laser of some sort. When they finally went outside, they could see the chaos that was unfolding.

Mech's dropping in just around the outside of the Shelter where the Dalki were protecting, and ability users nearby outside firing off their powers fighting against the Dalki.

"It's the military. They have come back to save us!" The men shouted.

It certainly seemed that way. There was no reason for them to arrive after all, but Ruby disagreed that they had come to save them. They could have come a long time ago and transported them to another Shelter or planet, but that never happened.

She feared that the actual reason the military had decided to come here was because they wanted to get rid of the Dalki, which would be bad news for her.

'Why, why couldn't you just leave us in peace.' Ruby said as her face was full of tears, and she just wished one person was still here, Arthur.

On the ground floor, two head generals had been sent to get rid of the Dalki force. They were unsure how many Dalki were at the Shelter, but the order was quite clear. They were to suspect that the humans with the Dalki were part of the V's.

The head generals that were down there were head general Sach, along with Samantha.

"It looks like this might be quite the easy task," Sach said. "Bringing both of our forces in, it looked like Oscar wanted to deal with them quickly. I guess it makes sense because of where the Dalki are. How did they even get here in the first place."

"Sach!" Samantha shouted. "We are both head generals, and you decided to go against my suggestion. I suggested it would be best if we could find a way if the humans really were V's or not."

“And risk our people getting caught?” Sach replied. “Then the enemy would know about us, and a whole platoon would have died for no reason. This was the best decision, as you can see.”

Even though Sach had his reasons for doing things, she didn't like it. After Oscar had released the information to the whole world, there seemed to be two types of reactions. Either those who are cautious around others or those who trusted no one, and Sach clearly preferred to trust no one.

Soon, the humans had realised this fact as well, as a Mech had dropped down on top of one of the wooden platforms and was pointing its laser arms directly at the humans.

“Watch out, the army. They are attacking us as well!” Ruby shouted, but no warning would save their lives.

Then a large black fist that looked like a claw could be seen sticking through the Mech. The insides were destroyed, and in seconds, it was chucked off the ledge allowing it to fall to the ground. The Dalki was covered in green blood and looked at the humans in front of it for a few seconds, before leaping off and continuing to join the fight.

“The Dalki, they really are protecting us for some reason, and the army, why are they attacking us?” The people thought. “What do we do?”

All of those in the Shelter were now confused. The ones meant to be protecting them were trying to kill them, and those they knew as their enemies for a lifetime were now saving them.

In the end, what choice did they have? They could only join the Dalki as they fought for their lives.

“I guess it's time we finish this up. Why don't me and you join the battle.” General Sach said as he looked over to Samantha. “We could have a friendly competition. If I kill more than you, then why don't you take me up on a date?” He asked.

“I would like to take you up on that offer.” A voice said from above, and soon the Dalki had landed on the ground shaking the whole area around them.

As they quickly recovered their balance and looked at what had landed in front of them, they could see one thing, a single horn sticking out from its head.

My Vampire System Chapter 1122: One Horn evolving

“What did you say?!” Oscar shouted , echoing through the office they were in. The reason for his cry was the new report that had just come in.

There was a nervous look on his assistant’s face as sweat was running down her face. Jane was afraid to repeat the content of it again, for the matter was disbtrastly serious.

“We have received an urgent report from the first Earthborn group, they have encountered the One Horned Dalki. The leader in the last war has not only been spotted but appears to have already joined the battle.” Jane repeated.

At the moment, Oscar was still on one of the Bertha ships that was nearby the teleporting station. The main reason was due to his gut feeling. It had told him that something would be going on, on that planet.

After hearing the news of the Dalki leader being there, he could only imagine that they were planning something disastrous and if worse came to worse he would have to join in the battle as well.

“Quickly, I must prepare to leave. Samantha and Sach won’t be enough to deal with him. It took all of the four leaders to take him on, and even though we have grown greatly since then, I fear that there may be a larger force than we first thought.”

As Oscar was getting ready to leave to head out to the battlefield himself, he couldn’t help but think this planet or base that the Dalki had created, must somehow be crucial to them. There was no other explanation as to why One Horn would be there personally.

'Could this be the base that allows them to communicate with the V? If so, we have to capture it at all costs. Winning the battle might be the key to ending the war!' Oscar thought, as he rushed over.

At the same time, in the Dalki mountain-like structure that they used as their main base, Graham was the only Dalki present today, only he wasn't alone for there was a vampire sitting opposite him.

"Do you think it was the right decision? You have sent out two of your strongest forces, Slicer and One Horn." Jim asked.

"Of course, else I wouldn't have sent them out." Graham replied matter of factly. "You should worry about completing your own job. I have already given you a force to help you with that, have I not?"

"Yes, but you see I have lent that force to another, so once again I am left on my own, well not without my own people." The vampire stated.

"Jim, you are a smart person, I'm sure you can guess what will happen. One Horn was sent out to fulfill the deal we made. Consider it our way to prove to you that we are indeed trustworthy. He won't fail his mission and neither will Slicer."

"The humans are still unaware of our true strength. There is no single human in existence that could defeat Slicer or One Horn at the moment. Perhaps if all the powerhouses were to come together it might be a different story, but that is why I instructed them to strike two different places at roughly the same time." Graham explained.

"Not a single human? I guess you believe the vampires are stronger then." Jim spoke. "However, if not a single human can beat them, then what about you? Does that make you invincible?"

"If only we didn't have one defect when you created us." Graham answered with a smile, which showed his vicious sharp teeth. No matter how much he dressed in human clothing, or made himself appear human, his teeth would forever reveal what he truly was.

Seeing the partly broken single horn on the Dalki's head that had landed in front of the two generals, they immediately recognised him. It didn't take long for Samantha to activate her soul weapon. Bringing up the nine tails of earth that would come out from the ground and stay around her.

As for General Sach, his power stemmed from his nearly invincible body, and he needed to get up close to the Dalki. Charging in, Sach leapt forward pushing from the ground throwing out his knee with full force.

As it hit the Dalki, the force could be seen coming out from the other side of his body, and Samantha thought this was the perfect chance for her to use her soul weapon, throwing out all of the nine tails with the pointed tips towards the Dalki's back.

'Please be hurt enough so he says still for just a second!' She silently prayed.

The tails were inches away from the Dalki's back, and were aiming right where their heart would be. It looked like they could possibly deal with this quickly.

"You've underestimated us! You're not the only race capable of growing stronger!" Sach shouted, as he prepared to perform another kick.

The tails had hit the Dalki, but they all smashed at that point including the tips, breaking and chucking up piles of the ground falling to the floor. Samantha's eyes were spread wide open as it was the first time her soul weapon, the sharp tips she could place on her earth ability had failed to pierce anything. It would even work on the Dalki.

Sach went to kick the Dalki's head with all his strength. Although the beast gear he was wearing didn't particularly have any active skills, it was focused on the strength aspect more than anything. Having great strength and speed already, Sach was expecting to kill the Dalki with a single hit.

But, all he could see was that the formerly unmoving Dalki, finally acted, by grabbing General Sach's leg with a single hand. The kicks the military man had trained for a number of years had been stopped just like that.

And that's when Samantha realised they were in for a world of trouble, as she stared at the back of the Dalki. Seeing the horn they had already gauged how much of a threat he would pose, so they had acted fast. One Horn, a strong four spiked Dalki, they assumed him to be the leader of their race, however the number of spikes coming from his back, no longer matched their intel.

'Is this the power of a five spike? Even us head generals seem to stand no chance.' Samantha thought.

"Run!" Sach shouted. "Get out of here and warn everyone!"

The next second, Sach's body was slammed hard into the ground while being held by his ankle. The ground broke beneath him, but his body was fine. Thanks to his ability he was pretty resilient.

"Oh, I think you are the first human I have met whose body didn't suddenly splat into red liquid from doing that. I think I'm going to have a lot of fun with you!" One Horn grinned as he looked over Sach.

When being told to come here by Graham, One Horn was against the idea. He had thought this job would be pretty annoying and he didn't quite understand why they were going through with this 'Promise' of theirs anyway.

As such, the Dalki was now quite excited to find someone that looked like they could put up something. When the Dalki attempted to swing Sach, again into the ground in another area, he tried his best to press off the ground, kicking off using a force equal in power.

'It's going to be hard with one leg, but I have to use everything I have.'

At the same time, the ground beneath him rose and shot up, and the one doing the work was none other than Samantha. With the forces joining together and all of Sach's beast armour powering him, he was somewhat able to equal the force of the Dalki, and was now head height with the Dalki, but One Horn refused to let go of the leg.

Spinning his body, not caring for breaking his bones, Sach kicked the forearm of the Dalki, not once but several times. Each time the air rippled on the other side of the forearm.

“You want me to let go that badly, then be my guest!” The Dalki said, as he swung Sach up high in the air letting him go, and he was soon sent flying, as he continued to go higher and higher into the sky.

“Sach!” Samntha cried out. She needed to save him somehow, catch him or create something to cushion his fall, but she knew the Dalki wouldn’t allow her to move.

‘But what can I do!’ She thought, and it also looked like the Dalki forces were getting a second wind, as the humans from the shelter were starting to support them. Fighting against the military power that was attacking them.

“I...”

“Back down now!” A voice ordered her, and a tunnel of ice shot out, heading straight for the Dalki. This attack made it clear that he had arrived. Oscar, the supreme commander of the military and leader of the Earthborn group.

‘A five spike here of all places. This wasn’t in the report.’ Oscar thought. ‘It looks like we need to call for help as soon as possible. Quinn, Owen, I can’t do this alone.’

Alas, for now he would have to.

My Vampire System Chapter 1123: Two vampire knights

There were no set schedules between vampires when one would sleep or stay awake. Unlike the humans they didn’t follow the sun, nor did they need as much sleep as humans. Then there were also sub classes that didn’t require any sleep at all.

As such, it wasn’t too surprising that at any time of day, one could see lights all around the place and people coming and going around in the Vampire World. Today though, Bryce had given an order to a certain number of vampires, to gather in the castle once more, to hold a special meeting.

He wasn't in his usual throne room, instead he was in the dungeon of the castle where prisoners would often be kept before heading off to the fourteenth castle or for execution. One of these deep underground tunnels led to a certain place.

A special room that Bryce had created once he had become king, putting a special type of combination on the door. For this door, he didn't even allow Muka to know the combination, and Muka wasn't even made aware that such a tunnel existed in the first place.

Going through the tunnels, the special leaders that had been invited could go and visit Bryce, without the others knowing.

"This certainly seems more fun than the time when I was alive." Tempus said out loud to himself as he walked towards the special door. Giving a type of knock on the door that only he would know, it was soon opened from the inside, and Tempus could now see the other leaders that were there.

"You invited the second Original!?" Suzan, the leader of the third family exclaimed, the shock being so great that she had jumped out of her seat. If it had been any other time, she would have shown the vampire great respect but today things were different for a reason.

"Calm down, he is already aware of everything that is going on and everything that has happened. I know the second family wasn't involved back then, but after what happened to Cindy, it was impossible to hide it from him. Besides, he has been a great help so far."

Learning of this fact, the rest of the leaders in the room stood up and bowed to him. The ones attending were Bryce's two Royal Knights, Prima Kilton, ex leader of the twelfth family, and Kyle Harlu, ex leader of the seventh family.

On top of this, Jill, the ex eighth family leader who still had her dead eyes, was standing rather than sitting at the table.

"As you all have been made aware, Arthur will come to pay us a visit. And there is only one reason we can all think of, he has come to get revenge for what we have done to the other Punishers." Bryce stated. "I don't regret what we did. We needed to make sure that they would never come back, but because we didn't finish the job properly the first time, we still have troublesome people coming back now."

“To rectify our past mistake, I have gathered you here to ask for your help. I know a lot of you have not informed the new leaders in your family about your past, and I don’t blame any of you. If we had succeeded in the past we could all just bury this event as a part of history, but since our ‘old friend’ will come to pay us a visit we will have to deal with him.”

“Any vampires that you see as expendable, please send them my way. I have already exhausted my connections to the first family, and I’m aware that Muka already knows that something is up. If the first family’s number gets any smaller or we go out to create more newborns, people will certainly start to ask about it.”

The room remained silent after Bryce’s request. This group of people had hardly met up before Bryce had become King, but at least then, the ex first family leader had treated them as equals.

All of them were here because they had committed the same sin, but now that Bryce was King, although he had ‘asked’ them for this favour, his tone had made it clear that it was just for appearance’s sake. In reality, it was pretty much an order.

“What do you plan to do with these people?” Suzan asked. “It sounds like they may never be brought back. I’m fine with sending you criminals or people who disobey rules, but if you can promise me they will come back, then I’m happy to send you others as well.”

Some of the others agreed with this. They too feared that maybe the vampires that they would send to him would forever disappear. It certainly sounded like that based on the way he was talking about the first family.

“Arthur is strong. Have you forgotten how much so?” Bryce replied to them all. “It would be great if that man would only believe himself to be untouchable, but he came at all of us at the same time. We would all be dead by now if he hadn’t left of his own free will and even the old King had been unable to do anything about it!”

“Our only hope to stand up against him is that he will believe that we are still weak, that we won’t have any solution to stop his shadow powers, but with your help, I will! As for your people... no they will not return.” Bryce admitted. “I will make sure that they will be remembered as heroes, but without sacrifice we can’t win this upcoming battle.”

It worried them a little, the way Bryce was speaking. As the King shouldn't he care for the well being of the vampire race? Didn't they all agree to get rid of the Punishers, so that no more vampire lives would have to end? So then how could he so easily ask for the lives of their fellow vampires?

Still, it also felt like they had no other choice now. After getting involved in the past they could no longer be forgiven. Arthur as the leader of the Punishers might have chosen to postpone punishing them for their crime once, but it was nigh impossible for something like that to happen again.

"If only there was a way to convince the other leaders that Arthur is the villain we should be fighting against." Tempus spoke. "I think it would increase our chances, don't you? Besides, then there would be no need for you to worry about certain leaders teaming up with the Punisher."

The others found it odd that the second family was working with Bryce. After all, the second family had not been involved with the matter of the Punishers back then.

"Oh, if you have a suggestion, please share it with us all." Bryce said.

"I think he will be surprised by seeing some old faces reappear in front of him again." Tempus said.

— —

Over at the tenth castle. Paul had been doing his duties as the Vampire Knight quite diligently. The human soldiers had built up a good relationship with those in the tenth. It seemed like most of the distrust had gone away after Quinn had been hailed a hero.

This had made Paul's job a lot easier than before. Sitting at his desk inside the castle, Paul was going through paperwork, reminding him of the days when he had been in the military without any abilities. It was one of the reasons he had been able to adapt to the situation quicker than most. He also had the likes of Xander and Timmy helping him out.

'Quinn, there has been no report from you. I hope you still remember the request I have made. I know you will look after all of our families, but I can't help but worry that the war has already started. I'm not sure how busy you will be whether you can still protect them all at that time.' Paul thought.

At that moment, the mask that he mostly kept around his waist started to vibrate and he was wondering who could be calling him at a time like this. Sam had given him a few updates about the current situation of the world, but also missed out on many. Perhaps it was because he knew that Paul would want to get involved if he knew too much.

When answering the call, it had come from someone unexpected.

“I see, I think that is possible.” Paul replied, as he stood up from his seat, and started to head to the throne room of the tenth castle. There, Paul stood in front of the teleporter.

He pressed a few of the buttons on the front, activating the teleporter and soon it started to light up as it was activated, he waited a few seconds, and coming through the teleport two people could be seen.

Although, one of them looked quite different compared to before.

“Welcome back, I didn’t expect to see the two of you return first before the others. Is everything okay?” Paul asked.

“It was an unexpected return for us as well, but necessary.” Leo replied, with Erin following him from behind.

My Vampire System Chapter 1124: A ticking bomb

It came as quite a surprise to Paul that the one who had requested a return to the tenth castle, was none other than Leo. He was sure that the other Vampire Knight would be helping Quinn out to the best of his abilities, especially since they were going up against the Dalki.

Who better to have by your side than someone who had the experience of fighting them in the past? However, as soon as he saw the other person next to Leo, he was beginning to get a rough idea what led them here.

Erin's usual blonde hair had turned black, but that wasn't the most prominent thing that stood out about her. That would be the pair of chains that were now covering both arms, clearly tied up in a restrictive way. On top of that, he could see that Erin's arms were still twitching.

'What's happening to her? Is it some type of disease?' Paul wondered. 'Leo has always had a soft spot for his students, but Erin seems to go even above that. I just hope nobody will ever use that against him.'

Paul knew this well, it was the whole reason he had given up his humanity in order to protect his platoon that he had originally arrived with him.

"There are some matters that I need to deal with. You haven't told anybody about our arrival here, have you?" Leo asked.

"No." Paul shook his head. "You wouldn't have asked me to bring you cloaks if you wanted your presence to be known, now would you? Ever since that event, our faces are quite well known all over, so take these and cover up." Paul handed over the cloaks, but as he was about to present it to Erin, Leo snapped it from Paul instead.

It was just the confirmation he needed to know that something was definitely up. Perhaps even Quinn didn't know what was going on judging by the strange way Leo was acting.

"Thank you." Leo said hastily. "I'm sorry to have left you here with all this burden on your shoulders. If there is anything I can help you with, I will be happy to do so once I'm done with my own task."

"Perhaps this is payback for me not looking after the second base so well." Paul shrugged, smiling back at him. Although Paul was the one who had originally hired Leo, they hadn't really gotten around to talk much like this, and who would have thought they would be in this situation at the moment.

"The leaders are seemingly preparing for something and there has been less infighting than usual, so there actually hasn't been much to do. Just concentrate on whatever you came here to do and perhaps after that it would be for the best if you go and assist Quinn."

“The fact that things are that calm is a little unsettling in itself.” Leo commented, before he and Erin quickly wrapped themselves in the cloaks to set off.

‘Why was I so on guard when I looked into that girl’s eyes?’ Paul wondered. All the cells in his body had been screaming to either kill or be killed.

Since they wanted to exit the castle in secret, the duo had to scale out from one of the windows, and down from the castle. Then once they were in the tenth area they could relax a little.

Finally away from their family members, the two of them decided to go down an alleyway that was between two large houses. The good thing was that the inner castle area was a little quiet around the tenth area. It looked as if Paul had kept the requirements for entering the inner area quite strict.

“How did you feel when you met Paul? Was it similar to when you are around me? Or is being around more than one of us worsening your condition?” Leo asked.

“Worse.” Erin kept her answer short as if talking alone was taking a toll on her while she was holding down her urges. “Ever since we entered I can feel everyone. Imagine the entire place being filled with blood.”

Although it was impossible for her to make that comparison because she didn’t know what it was like to be addicted to the blood, and Leo didn’t know what it was like to be like Erin either.

“For now, try to get used to the feeling. This might be the quickest way for you to learn to resist it. Here in a world where it’s plentifully easy to get, then when we are back on track you should be...fine.” Leo tailored off, because he could tell the energy inside her was growing by the second.

This was the only choice he had, and if this didn’t work he needed a backup plan. Leo didn’t know much about the Vampire World, and he didn’t know many people he could trust either that might be able to help him in the situation he was in, but there was one person.

— —

In the thirteenth castle, Silver was performing her normal duties and was walking down a grand hallway. Suddenly, someone appeared directly in front of her, someone who she hadn't seen for a while now.

"Leo?" Silver asked, a little stunned. She hadn't gotten any news about him returning and in the next moment she saw the cloaks. Since they had come unannounced then they didn't want anyone to know that two Vampire Knights were meeting informally like this.

"Since when were you on a first name basis?" Erin grunted.

Ignoring Erin's sass, Silver pulled the two of them into the closest unoccupied rooms, which happened to be one of the bedrooms. The female Vampire Knight quickly locked the door behind her, not that it would stop a vampire from coming in, but would give them time to escape, or Silver could just answer saying it was her inside taking a rest.

"What are the two of you doing here?" Silver asked in a hushed voice staring at Leo, but she couldn't help but notice the wincing, and twitching that was coming from Erin either.

"I'm sorry, but there are not many I can trust in this place. The King and the others do not know of our arrival and I would like to keep it that way. We have a problem and I hope you can help with that." Leo explained. "You are trustworthy, skilled, and I'm guessing a beautiful person who wouldn't mind helping an old man, correct?"

"Old?" Silver chuckled. "Perhaps you look old before, but with your evolution you look like a fine man, also agewise I am probably four times your actual age." Silver stated with an amused smirk.

"The bloodsuckers are seen as enemies of the vampire settlement, and I believe that King Bryce had said that he has destroyed all the ones that were being made by Cindy, but I was wondering if they were still more out there, and if they would still count as being a vampire?" Leo asked.

It was a strange question to ask, but maybe Leo wanted to catch the Bloodsuckers to find out more about the second family. Silver too, didn't like the feeling she was getting from the Original second leader Tempus.

“There might be some out there, and there are always vampires that seem to give in to the blood. Although far less than in the past since we have taken measures against them now. However, it might be a struggle to find them. As for your other question, of course they are vampires. Some even believe that they are the vampire’s true form, and choose to turn into one out of choice and leave the settlement.”

This was a bit of a problem, they could go hunting in the vampire world to try to find the Bloodsuckers, but there was no guarantee that they would be successful, and Erin might explode by then.

Bringing her here was a risk as well, as the vampires could possibly find out about her.

“What about vampires that commit severe crimes, or are to face execution? Does the thirteenth family have any?” Leo questioned.

Now, Silver was at a loss, but since it was Leo she decided to answer.

“There are vampires that break the code, commit sins, and fight against each other. There are even vampires that talk back to their Vampire Knights and leaders and that in itself is punishable by death.”

“As long as the vampire being punished belongs to that family, the leaders are usually left to deal a punishment they believe is fit. Unless it is quite a serious matter. This is why even though we are limited to a number of vampires per family, new vampires are born to keep up the numbers.”

“Although, I believe some leaders also use this as an excuse to off vampires, in hopes that a stronger one may come from a new line. As for vampires that commit crimes, they are mostly dealt with by Muka, it might be best if you talk to him if you are trying to find someone.”

During the whole time the two of them were talking, Leo had kept turning back his head looking towards Erin. They needed to move fast.

“Thank you for your help, it’s time we leave. I shall repay your kindness in the future.” Leo promised, as they quickly opened the window to the room, and the two of them were ready to jump off from the ledge.

Erin was to climb on to it first, but she soon turned her head to look at Silver, and her glowing yellow eyes were seen. Leo quickly gave Erin a little nudge before jumping off as well.

'Yellow eyes, a search for vampires or Bloodsuckers... no this can't be!' Silver thought, as she had figured out why they had asked those questions.

My Vampire System Chapter 1125: The first loss

A few days had passed since Quinn and his group had arrived on Blade Island. They had learned quite a few new things during their stay and some dynamics had changed within the group.

For one, Quinn had no idea what was taking Eno's people so long to arrive at the island. Whenever he had asked the old man, the only answer he would get out of him was they would be here eventually. It appeared that they had to either be coming from a very far away destination, or were making sure that no one could see them while on their way there.

The Demon tier beast had returned to his original spot in front of the tablet. For most of the time it seemed to be napping, only waking up briefly whenever Quinn would visit to see if there was any information he could get about his family, or if the tablet would speak to him again, but it never did happen.

Since the plan to move the Dragon had been abandoned, Helen had decided to leave ahead of everyone else. Quinn had instantly agreed that it was vitally important for her to head out there. After all, just like Owen was out protecting the planets the Graylash family owned, it was the same for her. Helen was the one that was in charge of protecting most of the Cursed faction planets.

Who knew when the next large-scale attack from the Dalki or the Jim would occur?

Mona had been let out and was updated on the situation. She seemed okay but still didn't really know what happened. Usually, if she couldn't take over she wouldn't pass out like that, but she wasn't keen to try out again so soon.

However, their days on the island weren't totally wasted. The island was full of strong beasts that the others could use as a form of training.

Currently, seen coming out from the forest area that was just in front of the entrance to the large castle, Fex could be seen dragging a beast that looked similar to a boar. Its tusks were nearly as large as its whole body. Whoever ended up on the wrong end of those would never be able to get off them.

Fex continued to drag the boar that was wrapped with his red strings across the ground, and eventually cut off the string from his hand, leaving it to wiggle around a bit on the floor.

"Few, finally the second one." Fex said, wiping the sweat from his head. "I don't know what you want to do with these things, but it would be a lot easier if I was allowed to just kill it before bringing it over. Trying to capture a beast alive is a massive pain."

Standing in front of the castle were Quinn and Shiro, while Sil and Layla sat on the grand staircase that led up into the castle. Everyone else seemed to be relaxing in the castle itself doing their own thing, not really interested in much. They enjoyed the empty rooms, and this welcomed rest from their duties on the Cursed ship.

"Alright Shiro, it's now your turn." Quinn said, as he gave him a small nudge forward.

On the ground now, there were two different types of beast. One was a giant frog, with six eyes on its head that was also wrapped around with the same red strings. Both of them were Advanced tier beasts.

Even if they were to escape it wouldn't be much of a problem for the people there to deal with them, but Shiro still looked nervous. To him these were deadly beasts.

He inched closer and closer with both his hands out walking towards them.

"You can do this, they need you to do this. You've been practising a lot and I think I got the feeling down." Shiro mulled to himself. "Remember what that book said."

While searching the castle, the group were in luck. For when the Blades had left the island, nearly everything in the castle had been left behind as well. It seemed kind of sad in a way to see so much history left behind in such a place, but it looked like Hilston didn't care about it at all.

There was an entire grand library filled with information on top of information. After searching through the books, they had managed to come across a type of diary. It had details reporting how certain abilities functioned as if they were testing things and one of them, was Shiro's current ability.

It seemed like every chained ability they had was stored in that library filled with these notes and it contained crucial information about each ability. After handing the book to Shiro, Quinn had asked Sil if he could keep all the information. It felt wrong to just take something when it wasn't his and a member of the family he was taking it from was right beside him.

Sil hadn't even hesitated to agree. He didn't care for the books and he wanted to forget everything about the place anyway. Doing so, Quinn had put all of the books in his dimensional storage. These weren't ability books, they didn't tell the user how to cultivate the ability, but did tell them what the abilities were capable of.

Still, Quinn decided in his free time he would read the books as much as he could, knowing your enemy would give a person an advantage in a fight, and at some point Quinn felt like he would need to fight Hilston. Hopefully, however, it would be later rather than sooner.

Thanks to Shiro learning Qi, he was more in tune with his body than the average person. He could feel the changes that were happening as he activated his ability and thanks to the information in the book about what was possible, he could already do a few things.

It made Quinn wonder, if Pure ever did learn abilities it could make them stronger than others. While thinking about this, suddenly the frog beast shot out its tongue straight towards Shiro, and wrapped it around his wrist before it could touch him.

In less than a second though, Quinn was there to slice its tongue off. Immediately he went to look at Fex, who looked like he was trying to shy away.

"My bad." Fex mumbled an apology. "I just brought them here and that thing never used an attack like that when I was fighting it."

“Isn’t it a frog though?” Layla questioned. “What else can a frog do?”

Since the danger had passed, Shiro soon walked forward now armed with the knowledge that Quinn would be there if anything similar should occur. Placing one hand on each of the beast’s heads, Shiro concentrated. The palm of his hands started to light up slightly in a soft glow, and that was the end.

“Did it work?” Shiro asked

“Let’s find out.” Quinn said, as Shiro went to run where Layla and Sil were sitting. Quinn then cut the strings that were made by Fex and the two beasts were free. As they stood on their feet something felt strange about both of them.

The boar beast attempted to jump on its back legs, hardly making any distance whatsoever. It also would constantly pull out its tongue as if it was tasting the air. As for the frog beast, it looked like it was trying to figure out how its leg’s worked.

It was wobbling side to side pushing its back legs while using its upper body to charge forward which just caused its head to hit the ground.

“Bwahahaha!” Fex burst out laughing, and so did the others by the seats. It was quite a funny scene.

“Well that’s good, it looks like you’re getting the hang of using your ability. Now let’s try to put them back, their minds into their original bodies. After that we can try to just transfer the mind of one into the body of the other.” Quinn suggested, as they continued to test out Shiro’s ability.

But before that, Quinn could feel that he was getting a call from a certain someone. Placing the mask on his face he answered.

“Quinn, this is Sam, and I have an important report to make.” Sam said over the voice in a serious tone.

“Go on.” Quinn replied, worried about what might have happened for Sam to react in such a manner.

“Dalki were discovered on one of the planets owned by the humans. Oscar sent out two of his forces and in the end he even had to join the battle, because One Horn was there as well.”

‘Two groups and Oscar went there himself. How many Dalki were there?’ He thought. One Horn was probably the most described Dalki to all of humanity and he was the personification of why they feared the race.

“Does Oscar need help? Has he asked us to come to the planet?” Quinn asked, but there was silence for a few seconds.

“He did, but there was nothing we could do. Before we could even send out reinforcement the fight was already over. ... Humanity has lost their first battle against the Dalki.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1126: Plan coming together

In the first major attack of this second war, Quinn had successfully defeated the invading Dalki with minimal losses on the human side. A four spiked Dalki had invaded earth, yet had been unable to progress further from the original spot of where it had landed. Another four spiked Dalki had been beaten so badly that they had been forced to run off, while the rest of its forces had been dealt with, and of course the Cursed faction leader had saved the second fleet of the Graylash family.

All of these battles could be considered victories of the human race, despite the losses they had suffered on their side. So what did a loss mean?

Due to how important this was, and wanting to know more details, Quinn quickly gathered everyone on the island. They moved into the main castle throne room and sat around a dining table that was already placed there.

Next, Logan placed a device in the centre of the room, and a holographic display of Sam appeared in the middle. With it everyone would be able to hear the message and receive the details of what had occurred without the need to repeat it over and over.

“There’s quite a bit to explain and soon this information will be revealed to the public. Quinn, you and Owen were asked to be the first people to be contacted and this information to be passed on, so I want you to think carefully about what you want to do next.” Sam said.

Everyone in the room was seriously listening in, including Eno and Brock.

“It all started when some Dalki were discovered on one of the best planets owned by earth. It is centred quite fairly in the middle and not too far away from Earth’s Portal Station. Because of this, Oscar decided to treat it as a serious matter and sent out his men to deal with it.”

“Quinn, Fex, Layla and Sil, you should already be familiar with this planet. It’s the Orange portal planet you all had gone to on an expedition.”

Immediately, both Quinn and Fex looked at each other. For it wasn’t just the planet that their school had gone on an expedition for, but it was also the planet where they had awakened Arthur from his sleep.

‘The Dalki were found there? And the Dalki are there as well. Does this mean... could Arthur really be working with the other side? Just what could they be doing there?’ Quinn wondered.

“Why didn’t the Earthborn group ask for the Graylash faction or the Cursed action for help?” Chucky couldn’t help but ask.

“It’s a good point to make, but it was because they didn’t think they needed to. Their scouts estimated for there to be only one or two dozen Dalki, a number that two fleets should have been able to beat. There were also rumours of humans living at the settlement in peace, which made the Earthborn group assume they had to be Vs. They sent out two head generals to deal with the situation, Samantha and Sach.”

“In the end, the Dalki known as One Horn showed up there as well. Oscar had already predicted something like this might have happened, so he had stayed in the vicinity. The next thing they knew the humans were retreating from the settlement, Sach is in the hospital and Samantha has come out relatively fine. As for Oscar... It seems like he is on his last legs.”

“By the time we received a request for help, he was already facing One Horn to allow everyone else to escape. He barely managed to escape, but his arms, legs, and limbs were ripped from his body, His heart has remained intact, and same with his brain, but he is unresponsive at the moment.”

“They are keeping him alive, but are unable to perform surgery on him, for fear it might end his life. Now Innu is all that’s left really for the Earthborn group. Samantha can’t focus her attention due to her father’s situation and refuses to leave his side.”

“Sach will live but might never be able to fight again, so Innu is panicking and has called for help from the Graylash and the Cursed faction otherwise things might seriously fall apart. I concur with his opinion that this base has to be important to them. The plan is to launch a coordinated attack with you and Owen. And for Owen’s response he is waiting for your reply first.”

‘Didn’t Erin and Paul tell us about the people in that Planet, they are not vampires. They were the people that Arthur was with at the time. So why are the Dalki there as well, and why haven’t they killed them?’

‘Maybe if we go to the place, I’ll find out why Arthur did what he did.’

“Decline the request to attack the Dalki!” Was the first words out of Eno’s mouth after hearing what had happened. “Quinn, perhaps you’re curious why they are on that planet, but it is not worth the risk if One Horn is there.”

“One Horn, even if he isn’t the strongest Dalki in existence, he is at least the primary reason why the humans, or even vampires for this matter, have little hope of winning this war. Think of what happened to Oscar! He had a Demon tier weapon with him, and two head generals by his side and still ended up in that state.”

“I agree.” Mona said, who had mostly been recovering in the castle after suffering from trying to take over the demon tier beast. “All of the leaders in the past fought against One Horn, and we still weren’t able to kill him. However, he must have gotten stronger to be able to do something like that.’

Although two people were warning him, Quinn felt like they were overreacting. Whenever he had been fighting he had gotten through tough situations and the only opponents that were able to completely overpower him had been Hilston and Arthur.

Were they claiming that One Horn was on their level?

Still more so than anything, Quinn wanted to go there, hoping he might discover something about Arthur. Maybe the people he had protected would know something.

“Perhaps this isn’t my place to speak.” Layla chimed in. “But I think that Innu is obsessed with revenge at the moment and since he can’t do it himself, he wants to use us to achieve his goal. I think the more important thing is what to do with Oscar. Since he’s still barely alive shouldn’t we help him?”

‘Did Layla really just suggest that?’ Quinn was baffled.

If a person was on the verge of death, what could they do? The only thing they could do was...to turn that said person into a vampire.

“She’s right, this could be the chance to have someone of great influence under your control, but what would the people think, if all of their leaders were suddenly something...different to them.” Eno commented with a smirk.

“Can’t I help somehow?” Shiro asked, raising his hand. “If I can move Raten and Vorden into a body, doesn’t that mean I can do the same thing to Oscar?”

“We haven’t tried your ability on humans yet though. We don’t know what you can do, especially on someone who is unconscious or brain dead. Maybe Oscar is still alive, but his head is gone” Fex replied. “We don’t know until we test the situation ourselves, but using a World Leader seems like a bad place to start. The easiest way might indeed be to convince humans that vampires are good if we turn him in.”

Now the humans in the group were starting to catch on, what exactly Layla was getting at.

“He should have a choice in that matter.” Logan interjected. “It’s unfair to turn someone against their will. I’m sure many people would jump at this opportunity if it was to become a vampire or death, but I for one don’t think it’s right to just turn someone because it’s more convenient to us.”

“Also it’s not clear yet if he can’t be saved another way. Technology has advanced very well. Even without limbs, if he wakes up he will be able to do everything he could before.”

In the middle of their conversation, the device in the centre of the table started to vibrate once again, noting that there was an incoming call. When answering they could see Sam again.

“I know I haven’t given you enough time to decide what to do, but that is not why I called. Quinn the request that you have asked, we have finally been able to find one. A humanoid Demi-god tier beast.”

‘Finally.’ Quinn thought, as he looked towards Shiro.

My Vampire System Chapter 1127: The strange plan

Sam’s second message kind of flew right above everyone’s heads. Barely anyone had paid it attention due to the first message pertaining to such a serious matter that they were all still thinking long and hard about before.

“Sam, while you are still on the line I have made a decision. I want you to report back to head general Innu, and Owen Graylash.” Quinn said in a serious tone after having listened to the opinion of all those around him. Everyone turned towards the centre of the table to listen to their leader’s next words.

“Tell them that the Cursed faction will not participate in the mission to get rid of One Horn.” Quinn stated.

A lot of them were holding their breaths, but in all honesty they felt relieved that Quinn had decided to abstain. Most of them had been worried about what would become of the Cursed faction if Quinn might suffer a similar fate to Oscar.

“I would also like you to convey my personal advice for Owen and Innu to refrain from attacking the place. If my hunch is right, the Dalki there won’t be doing anything any time soon. Attacking them will only cause more trouble, but I also want to make one more thing clear.”

“The Cursed faction is not going to completely leave them be forever either. We will deal with them, just not now.” Quinn added.

There had to be a reason why Eno was so sure the human race would lose against the Dalki without his help, and it seemed like the Dalki known as One Horn was a major one.

Perhaps in the past Quinn might have rushed in, wanting to learn the truth quickly, wishing to avenge Oscar. However, now as a world leader, he was aware that his decisions didn't just affect him but the whole world.

Although not now, he still intended to find out just why the Dalki would appear near a human settlement without killing the inhabitants and how exactly Arthur fit into the whole picture.

Innu was currently on one of the Bertha ships the military owned, yet not the same one as Oscar.

Sitting at his desk, he was biting away at his fingernails, not in fear or anxiousness instead it was in excitement.

‘I can't believe such an opportunity has actually come my way.’ Innu thought to himself. ‘I saw how strong Quinn was against the Dalki. If it's just one of them, and with Owen who has already faced a four spiked Dalki, in the mix we can definitely defeat it with the three of us!’

‘As long as the three of us can get rid of it, what the other two head generals and the Supreme Commander couldn't, just what position would that put me in? I will be at the top of the ladder! A world leader, the next to become Supreme Commander! Oscar was getting old in the first place, and with how things had been going it's clear that he was most likely going to pass on the role to someone like his daughter Samantha, or that head general Paul of the second base.’

‘However, after seeing the way she acts now it is clear she is not fit to be leader. There will be public outcry if she was to be chosen. Everyone will be on my side.’ Innu was already dreaming about donning the mantle and receiving the praise and admiration of everyone.

The much awaited call finally came through, and Innu answered it rather quickly. However, it was nowhere near what Innu had hoped to hear. It also wasn't so much a conversation between the two of them as Sam merely passing on Quinn's message on the Cursed faction's stance.

"Let me speak to him! LET ME SPEAK TO QUINN RIGHT NOW!" Innu shouted down the receiver, holding back his anger to not crush it with his hand. Sam of course had half expected this reaction when delivering the message forward. He understood why Quinn had left him this task to handle instead of doing it himself.

"I'm sorry, but Quinn is extremely busy at the moment. He is currently undertaking a secret mission and is unable to get out. I would also like to remind you that we from the Cursed faction do not work under the Earthborn group so you have no jurisdiction over us. We have our own people and planets that need protection. Sending in more people could just cause more deaths." Sam tried to give Innu a professional reply to get him off his back.

"LIES! I know why you won't attack them! It's because you're working with them! The reason why the Dalki are leaving them alone are because they are Vs just like you all! I knew we couldn't trust any of you! Hear my word, I will be sure to let everyone know about this!" Innu complained.

"HEAD GENERAL INNU GET A GRIP ON YOURSELF!" Sam cautioned the other. "I understand that you must be emotional right now, so I shall pretend you hadn't said any of that. Let me repeat, our Cursed faction merely said that we won't attack the planet right now. As soon as Quinn is done-" Sam was trying to fix things diplomatically, but from the other end he heard Innu continue his angry rant. The other seemed unwilling to listen to a word he said, so Sam eventually just ended the call.

'How did someone like him ever become a head general in the first place? I guess this is what happens when you choose the people in high positions based on power over brains. Argh, we still need to keep a good relation with the Earthborn group. I have a feeling that all three groups will be needed to save us all.' Sam thought. He sighed and opted to call Innu back later once he might have calmed down to smooth things over.

Fortunately, delivering the message to Owen was a completely different experience.

"I'm sure he has his reasons." Owen had said in an understanding tone. "I also was contemplating on what to do after what has happened to me but I think the Cursed faction might know more about this Dalki situation than us. So I will trust him."

--

Back on Blade Island. After the call had ended, Quinn had wanted to do a few more things with Shiro. They were still waiting for Richard's people to arrive after all, and after a series of tests he thought that Shiro was truly ready.

Nearly the whole group were back outside in front of the castle, and had continued where they had left off with the tests.

"The only problem is that you need to touch the person in order to use your ability. It's similar to the beast's taming ability, and Sil's ability as well." Quinn summarised, as he had some concern written on his face.

"Quinn, I have to ask. What was Sam going on about before?" Layla asked. "About how he had found a humanoid Demi-god tier beast? Do you need its crystal for some reason?"

Quinn looked around to check if Eno, or Brock were nearby and then sniffed the air, but it didn't seem like they were around. He then smiled and shook his head.

"I don't need the crystal." Quinn replied. "I wanted to use their bodies and I'm not just looking for one humanoid beast, but two."

At that moment, Sil sprung up like a bamboo shot.

"Quinn are you..."

"If you're okay with it." Quinn smiled. "I've been thinking of a way we can do this for a while now, a way to bring back Vorden and Raten without relying on Richard. You see, his clones would be a temporary step anyway and I don't trust him not to have some sort of power over them. Besides, they would have had to learn the ability of the Blades again."

“I don’t feel comfortable using another human’s body either, and I don’t think Vorden would like that either. So I asked Logan and Sam for a request and they have been searching for a long time now and it looks like they have finally found one.”

“Why do you think I’ve been asking Shiro to do so many tests on the beasts here? I needed to know if his ability would work on beasts just as well as they did on humans. The worry was if we were to put a human mind in a beast, since they don’t like for like maybe that would cause some problems. If it did then we would just have to get Shiro to put them back.

I thought, what’s the closest thing to a human that could survive for a really long time? Why not a humanoid beast? Their intelligence is great, similar to humans and some can even speak especially at the higher tiers.” Quinn shared his thoughts on the matter.

Everyone’s mouths were left wide open as they couldn’t believe their ears. Quinn was really suggesting that they put both Vorden and Raten into the body of a humanoid beast!

“Now all we need to do, is check if Raten and Vorden are still in your head.” Quinn said looking at Sil.

My Vampire System Chapter 1128: Going a bit crazy

A lot of time had already been spent waiting on Blade Island, but there didn’t really seem like there was anything the group could do. Quinn was getting more and more frustrated with each passing day, especially now that there was a potential way to help Vorden and Raten.

He kept himself busy during his free time by reading through the notes that had been left behind about the abilities that Hilston had kept. Since they weren’t ability books he was unable to use the system to instantly learn the information and had to go through them the old-fashioned way. In those peaceful moments, Quinn felt reminded of being a student who was cramming to prepare a presentation for class.

Still, they needed to progress and move forward, so Quinn eventually went to Eno with a request.

Eno and Brock would usually spend their time on top of one of the castle's four towers; today's choice had been the east tower. As far as Quinn could tell the two older men seemed to be just staring up into the sky.

"The Dragon no longer needs to be moved, and a lot of time is being wasted. While we are just waiting here the Dalki out there are constantly out on the move. I think it's best if we leave this place." Quinn said after he had arrived.

"Have you come here to ask me for my permission?" Eno asked without so much as changing his lying posture. "In case you've forgotten, you're your own leader. The goal of this mission was to complete your side of the deal, but we have already agreed that it's for the best to let the Dragon remain here. At least for the time being."

Quinn hadn't forgotten the supposed hierarchy, but due to Eno being with them for a while, and him being the person Quinn had searched for for the longest time, it felt weird to just decide to do things without him. Besides, Eno always had something to say about Quinn's decisions, so he was surprised to hear this now of all things.

"I've come here to inform you about our next course of action. So what are you planning to do? Are you going to come with us, or do you want to wait for the others?" Quinn asked.

"We will stay here." Brock answered as he sat up to face Quinn while Eno continued to stare out towards the sky. "Me and Eno have evaluated the Cursed faction long enough. There won't be much of a difference with us being there or not, and at this point I think my master has something he would like to say."

Brock, then bowed down and stepped aside holding his hand out. Eno took Brock's hand and got up, facing Quinn.

"Congratulations, Quinn. It looks like you're indeed the one I have been waiting for. Now I don't want you to get too big headed." Eno 'praised' the Cursed faction leader. "After watching you for a while, you seem to have the talent to end up in all sorts of situations. Although I'm still not sure if I should say you've been blessed by a god of good luck or one of bad luck considering the constant things that you face."

“Now with the state the human race is in, you are really the only person I can trust to stop the Dalki. You’ve heeded my warning and you have many people around you that will help. You know what you need to do, when the time is right, I will have someone come out and seek you, but remember Quinn, you are to complete your side of the bargain no matter what!”

“When we need to move the dragon, you will do so with Sil’s ability or without it!”

The conversation was over, and Quinn was free to leave, but as he did, he couldn’t help but wonder what Eno meant by his words. Did he know what Quinn was planning to do? That he was going to try and bring back Vorden and Raten before moving the Dragon tier beast?

He somehow had known many things before that he shouldn’t have been aware of, but at the same time that knowledge hadn’t been omniscient.

‘Richard did help create the system with me and Logan’s family.’ Vincent commented. ‘He was also able to override it that one time, which means that perhaps he has a way to access your system and see everything you are doing. In some type of way.’

If that was true, then that was a scary thought to have. This system was what had allowed Quinn to grow stronger in such an incredible fast way. It had helped him along the way, but it was a fact that he didn’t have complete control over it. Perhaps one day it could be used against him, which made Quinn think if he would have to look for a way to get rid of it at some point.

‘I’ll need to learn to be less reliant on the system. Even without it, my body can still work using most skills. Still there are some things like the soul weapons and more that I can’t use without it yet.’

In the past, it had been beneficial for Quinn to learn how to use the skills himself anyway, rather than relying on the system. It would solve the light delay in time that he had when activating skills through the system.

So it just made more sense for him to learn how to use the abilities properly. Unfortunately that required a lot of time, and how often was he really granted such a luxury? Not to mention there was so much for him to learn and do.

Now knowing that they were to head off the island, Quinn decided to head for the tablet one last time without everyone else. The dragon had remained there and now only half opened one eyelid to see who it was. As soon as he recognised Quinn, he closed it again and continued his slumber

'Who would have ever thought I would make a Demon tier beast grow so accustomed to me that it would just sleep around.' Quinn thought amused.

He started at the tablet and checked his Quest log. There were two main quests still available for Quinn. One to find out what lay beyond a Vampire Lord, only levelling up was taking an incredibly long time these days.

He was also worried that this was something no other vampire had ever reached or heard of before, so when would he evolve again? Level 70? Level 80? Level 100? There were perhaps any other conditions the system wanted him to fulfill?

As for the second quest that was to find out more about the Talen family.

'How do I even start that?' Quinn wondered.

When checking out his system, his eyes went towards one of the items that were there, something he still had no idea what to do with.

'The seedling from the Demon tier beast. I was thinking about putting it somewhere on the Cursed ship so I could observe it, but that might be too dangerous. It would be a catastrophe if it turns into the same Demon tier tree again.' Quinn thought.

He could just try to plant it on the original planet it came from, but none of the inhabitants would want that for obvious reasons. Then there was Blade Island. Currently it was inhabited by no one but a large dragon and beasts.

In the middle of the open ground, Quinn dug a whole, and planted the seed in place covering it up. He really didn't know what to do, or what he expected to happen from the seed now. He just watched it for a few seconds, and then, the ground where it was buried started to light up, glowing slightly pink.

A strong life energy could be felt from it, but at the same time it was only a baby.

‘Will this really grow into another Demon tier beast? I guess this island will be the best place to put it, it won’t do harm to the tablet, and even if the Dalki attack they would be in for a surprise.’ Quinn smirked at the thought.

For a second the dragon turned its head and got up on all fours looking at the area the seed was planted, it looked like it was about to do something, but then soon sat down.

‘Did it not like that to put the seed here, maybe that guy from inside the tablet told it to calm down.’

“Hey big guy, I’ll be leaving now. Make sure you look after this little seed for me alright. You already protect the tablet so that can’t be too hard of a job for you, right?” Quinn asked.

The dragon blew through its nose once. Quinn had no idea if that was supposed to be a yes or no, but one thing was clear, it could somewhat understand what he said.

Going back to the seed Quinn placed his hands on it once again. The higher tier a beast was, the more advanced its intelligence seemed to be, so maybe it was the same with this seedling even though it was a baby.

“Grow up big and strong okay, and when I come back, try not to kill me.” Quinn spoke to it softly.

The pink lights shined brightly for a few seconds then dimmed down again.

“I must be going crazy, talking to a seed.” Quinn mumbled once he was a bit away.

My Vampire System Chapter 1129: Always getting in the way

After more than a week of relaxation on Blade Island the Cursed group had finally headed off again, back to the main Cursed ship. There they wanted to retrieve further information from Sam on the details of the Demi-god tier humanoid beast.

Humanoid beasts were said to be the strongest type of beast for that specific tier. Not just because of their powers but more so because of the level of intelligence they displayed. Quinn had now fought against two Demon tier beasts, but neither of them had been the humanoid type, so perhaps this would prove to be more difficult than that, in fact he was sure of it for a major reason.

Their goal was not to kill the beast but to capture it. What's more since they planned to use its body, they would have to make sure to keep it as intact as possible. Sure, a healer might be able heal some of its wounds, but that was under the assumption their abilities would work on the beast's body.

Chucky was the last one to enter after taking a toilet break. The room was mostly silent and Quinn could be seen reading a book, as for himself though he didn't really have anything to do, so decided to go to the bar-like setting area and chat with the others.

"So I heard that the Demi-god tier crystal is also near the earth station, right?" Chucky asked. "Does that mean you're going to pay Oscar a visit before landing, or on the way back?"

Quinn placed his book down after folding a corner of the page to remember where he was, and looked up at who had asked the question. Chucky didn't exactly have a memorable voice.

"We will make a stop before confronting the beast. Perhaps Shiro might be able to do something after all, and we can also take the chance to take a look at the others." Quinn replied. "It should further prove that our relationship is not just a superficial one. There is just one troublesome person I would like to avoid."

That person was naturally Innu, the head general that was currently in charge of the Earthborn group. Despite Sam doing his best to smooth things over, it had been apparent that the other didn't trust them for refusing to get revenge on the Dalki.

Shiro was still practising using his ability. He had yet to manage to communicate or wake up Raten and Vorden in Sil's mind. Without that, the whole mission would be useless. The only problem was, that this

was considered a different skill to swapping minds and such, and one couldn't really practice this on beasts either, so Shiro was left to read the notes left behind carefully.

'How did they get this much information? They must have really put the Original user of this ability through a lot.' Shiro thought as he looked through the pages, seemingly hoping it might reveal something new to him.

Going by the dried blood stains, he could imagine them practically torturing the man, putting him in life and death situations while another person sat down and wrote notes.

Finally, the ship had arrived at the Cursed base, and everyone was free to relax again once more. A quick update showed that nothing bad had happened to the ship while they had been away, still Quinn wanted everyone to keep on their toes just in case anything was to occur.

However, there were a couple of people that Quinn didn't expect to be around. When he was walking through the halls, he could hear a particular voice from quite a short distance away.

"So how much has changed for you ever since you found out about the existence of the V?" Bonny asked.

"Honestly, not much has changed around here. We continue to operate just as we did before. I trust the leaders, they pay well and so far they haven't shown any signs of planning to break their promise to look after our families even after anything happens to us."

"That's a benefit that not everyone can guarantee, which is why I decided to stay in the first place. The only thing I will say is we don't really interact much with the leader Quinn and most things are done through..." As the man was about to finish his question, the very person he was speaking about was approaching the two of them.

—

The two that had arrived on the ship in Quinn's absence were Bonny and Void. They had gone to the break room and had explained to Quinn exactly the reason why they were here. It was due to the recent

reaction and announcement of the Cursed faction having V amongst them, most prominently Quinn himself.

“Don’t you think this is a good idea?” Bonny asked as she took a sip of her coffee. “People are scared after the reveal of the V but as if that wasn’t enough, they have also been told that you are our supposed allies. Is it any wonder that most don’t know who they are meant to believe now? Showing them the daily life of those in the Cursed faction and telling them what you guys are planning to do, this way people will be less fearful of you!”

As she was saying that, Void walked over and passed a coffee over to Quinn, and his hands were shaking as he handed the cup over. Of course, Quinn placed it right down onto the table. He knew Void was just trying to be polite but he didn’t drink that stuff.

It was at that point that Void started to realise all the different small actions of Quinn and certain other people on board.

“If you are wondering, I just drink blood and meat that has been cooked quite rare. We can also taste alcohol as well.” Quinn said with a smile. “You can put that in your little interview if you want to spread the word out.”

Quinn was trying to be a little playful and it driving home how people viewed them. The fact was even Void was scared of him right now, so he couldn’t imagine all the others that were out there as well.

“I assume Sam has already given you permission, so I don’t see any reason to revoke it.” Quinn sighed. The secret was out, so what was the worst that could happen?

“Actually I was kind of wondering about Quinn. We heard the news about Oscar, it hasn’t been announced yet, but are you going to go and try to save him?” Bonny asked.

After what had happened with Owen, Bonny and Void actually had paid a visit to him first, and Owen couldn’t shut up about the apparent miracle that Quinn did on him. How he had saved him when no one else could.

So they assumed that perhaps Quinn would be going to Oscar next, and perform something similar. Catching this on video would be sure to change the opinions of everyone around the world.

“Unfortunately Oscar’s situation is completely different to Owen’s.” Quinn admitted. “I will certainly pay him a visit, and there are a couple of things we will try to do to help him, but we have already talked about it and we will make sure that nothing will be done against his will.”

—

In order to travel to the Bertha ship where Oscar was currently receiving medical treatment, the Cursed faction needed to ask for permission and make them aware that they would be coming for a visit.

Of course at the moment the person who was in charge was displeased.

‘You’re saying those Cursed bastards are planning to visit the Supreme Commander? Do they really expect me to comply when we know what they are?! What if this was all a plan, what if he strikes him on his deathbed or worse, he turns him into one of them?!’

‘It could be the end of the human race as we know it, I have to put a stop to the two of them getting it.’ Innu worried.

My Vampire System Chapter 1130: Bringing one back

While waiting for a response from the Earthborn group, there was something that Quinn needed to do beforehand anyway. Inside his own personal training room was Logan, Sil, Shiro, Peter, Fex and Layla.

These people were in the room due to their connection with a particular person they were planning to bring back.

‘This room looks a lot better than the last time I was in it.’ Quinn thought as he noticed the walls were no longer covered in blood.

Shiro was standing on one side of the training room, with Quinn just behind him. While standing opposite the two of them was Sil. Everyone had gathered because today was the day where they were going to run a little test. A test to see if they could wake up Vorden and Raten, who were inside Sil's head.

"If it doesn't work, I won't blame you," Sil said. This had come as a surprise to everyone. Sil was actually the one trying to comfort someone else for a change. Hanging around with Shiro and making a new friend really did help him out.

"I don't want Sil to go back to the way he used to be, if we get back Raten and Vorden, only one mind can be present at a time, and maybe Sil will just go back to the way he was before. This is just a test for now, and we will definitely move them later.

"Right, I think I have the hang of it now, but it might take a few tries for it to work. I've never done this before." Shiro said. He wasn't worried about using his powers. It was more that he was concerned about disappointing Sil and everyone around.

"We have analysed that there should be less risk at this point," Logan stated. He was looking at some information on holographic screens that would appear in front of him. A copy of the notes was on display, giving him everything he needed. Placing it in his database to bring up whenever he wished.

"Using this type of skill with his ability only requires you and another user. There is little room for problems to occur. Perhaps the worst thing that could happen is that the two of you switch minds, then we would have another problem on our hands.

"Still, we wouldn't have lost the ability. Since even if you were to end up in Sil's body, due to the two of you touching, you would still have the same ability to fix the problem that has occurred. In a way, doing this with Sil due to his ability is probably the safest person one can do it with."

It was clear that Logan's explanation was meant to calm Shiro down, but it didn't help one bit. Still, he had practised for this day and placed his hand on top of Sil's head. Everyone waited silently for a few seconds, and Shiro's hand started to glow slightly.

"It... didn't work," Shiro said, looking at Sil's disappointed face, but Quinn quickly placed his hand on Shiro's shoulder.

"It didn't work yet," Quinn said.

They repeated the process over and over again, and Shiro carefully tried to remember how to use the skill. Even Logan would reiterate the words and how the ability user of the past felt when using this skill.

After several tries, it seemed like Shiro had finally gotten somewhere. His body was currently in a dark room, or it was safer to say that his mind was. He had done this several times and had gotten to this step, but before, he couldn't see anyone. Now he saw something for the first time.

Two glowing lights out there in the Dark space. As he reached out to them, his hand went through it like it was nothing.

'I thought that would work. What should I do?' Shiro thought.

He was unsure if this would work, but maybe things were complex because several minds were in one. Instead of swapping minds like he had done before. On the outside, he was already using the ability and had to concentrate. Focus on using the body while exploring the black space.

But what if this version of him, the one in the black space, also needed to use the ability. Shiro held out his hand again, touching the bright ball of light. Then his hands started to glow, and he was transported inside of another Dark space.

Only he wasn't alone, and another could be seen.

"What is this?" The person said as he turned around. Am I dreaming? I've been alone in this place for so long, but I've never seen anyone before, and I don't even recognise you?"

The speaking boy looked identical to Sil, only he stood quite confident, tall and had a calm look about him.

'Based on what Sil said about the other two people, this one should be Vorden. He said Raten would start cursing at me the second I entered.'

"My name is Shiro, and I'm part of the Cursed faction. Quinn sent me here to see you. He's been looking for you for a long time now." Shiro said.

At first, Borden was taken aback, but then the largest grin possible on his face appeared.

"They've been looking for me, and this whole time as well? What good friends." Vorden replied as he wiped his face with the sleeve of his shirt.

"My ability has allowed me to come into here. I think we can bring you back to the way you were before so the three of you can occupy Sil's mind. Right now, the group is looking for a body to transfer you into, and it looks like he might have found something..."

Shiro explained Quinn's plan, how he wanted to move him into a humanoid beast. Initially, when Vorden had made his decision, he did so for everyone. Not just Sil, but he wanted to protect them all and knew he wasn't strong enough to do it.

At the time, he really didn't know what would happen to him. He was stuck in a black room similar to the one before, only he was alone with no way to see or do anything. In here, he had a lot of time to think, and he missed his friends dearly.

"I can wait a little longer," Vorden said. "I don't care. Quinn can put me in a regular beast for all I care if it works out. I just want to see everyone again, but I think it would be best to leave me be for now. It sounds like that they might need Sil if they plan to capture this powerful beast alive. Our reunion can wait."

When speaking, Shiro could tell Vorden sounded like he was in pain. He knew he desperately wanted to get out of this place. Shiro had never seen a stronger person in his life. Despite all this, he was still willing to make a sacrifice for the whole sake of the Cursed faction.

"I promise, I Promised Sil and Quinn I would bring you back, so I will be back!" Shiro shouted.

“Oh, before you go, don’t worry about the other one. If he knows, he will just complain about it and make him even madder. Let it be a nice surprise for when he’s finally free.” Borden said, speaking about Raten.

Finally, leaving the Dark space, Shiro was now in Sil’s Dark space, then he had to leave once more. Opening his eyes, he was finally back in the regular room.

“I did it!” Shiro said with excitement, but his forehead and the side of his head was sweating, sweat dripping onto the floor, and Quinn was right behind him, having caught him. Not even Shiro had noticed he had expanded all of his MC cells and a lot of energy doing such a thing that he had fallen over.

“I spoke to Vorden...both in there.” Shiro managed to say before passing out and going into a deep sleep.

Sil had already summoned a wave of tears from his eyes, and he was drenching his shirt sleeve, trying to cover it up.

‘It looks like they both are still there, now we just need two more humanoid beasts, and we can get all of them back. Just you wait.’ Quinn thought.

‘Two more?’ Vincent replied.

‘Don’t you remember what I said before, Vincent? We’re getting you a body as well.’

My Vampire System Chapter 1131: The Green’s power

If Quinn had claimed he wasn’t worried about the whole Vorden and Raten situation, he would have been lying. He was incredibly worried as he had no clue what had really happened to them, only Sil’s account on the matter.

Finally Shiro brought them the confirmation they needed, that the two of them were both still present in Sil’s mind. Now, everything they had done and everything they were going to do wouldn’t be in vain.

The one most happy about it was undoubtedly Sil. Ever since he was practically walking around the base with a hop and skip in his steps. He greeted everyone that walked past. It was almost like he had turned into a completely different person, on top of that, he would constantly ask Shiro, what Vorden said, and how he was doing, even asking Shiro to speak to him again.

Shiro would have been happy to oblige, but using his ability had taken a toll on him and Quinn had ordered him to rest for the time being. Every human was born with a certain amount of MC cells, and it looked like Shiro had almost hit his maximum with doing what he needed to do.

Still, Sil wasn't the only one that was over the moon with this information. Little Borden was as excited that he would finally see his brother again. There was also other good news for him as the syringes of serum were able to be made from Logan. Right now it was just a temporary measure though. Logan was still trying to further improve on it, so that they could bring Borden back to his full size.

Finally, with all that done on the Cursed ship it was time for the group to move out again. The original gang who all knew Vorden was insistent that they wanted to come with Quinn. Logan, Fex, Layla, Peter, Sil and of course Shiro.

However, due to Wevil and Linda still being away with Alex who was crafting the Demon tier weapon, Quinn had asked Peter to stay behind once again.

"I'm sorry that it's you again, Peter, but you have to understand I'm only asking you to stay behind because of how strong you have become. You've been training with Nate, right? Improving how to fight?" Quinn tried to explain the reason behind his choice.

Peter ultimately agreed to follow the order and was currently seeing Quinn and the group off as they were boarding a medium sized ship. One that would be used for commercial flights. They weren't traveling far or heading into battle so it made sense for them to not waste resources.

"You know I was told that a normal Wight's stats usually hit a limit, and that they are able to be as strong as the leader to a certain extent, but you keep on improving and you are just as strong as me. With your healing abilities and if you carry on improving your martial arts, I think anyone that tries to take over this ship will regret it." Quinn said, giving him a few pats on the back.

In the past Quinn used to be worried about Peter a lot, especially after turning him since his personality had changed quite a bit, but lately, as he got stronger bit by bit, his friend became able to display more emotions, and he could tell these few words that Quinn said had pleased him.

Regardless, whether Quinn said them just to please him or not, he was very serious about his words.

“Take this Quinn, maybe you’ll need it.” Peter said as he handed over the Mud mask, Peter’s soul weapon. “You don’t have to put it on straight away, and who knows when you might need to use it. People don’t exactly like us at the moment.”

Of course, Quinn took it and thanked Peter for the gesture. It was indeed a valuable item and thing to be able to change into another. Using his shadow, the Mud mask was one of the things that could be stored just like any other regular item, so Quinn could equip it on when needed.

“Just wondering, don’t you have to decide who will disguise me as before you make it?” Quinn asked.

“It was.....what was his name again?” Peter thought. “Bucky.”

Quinn smiled, and gave a wave to Peter as he walked towards the ship.

“I think it’s Chucky.”

There were two more that were on board that weren’t exactly a part of the Cursed crew. There was Bonny and Void, who wished to document everything he was doing, at least him meeting Oscar.

The ship was off and started to head to the Bertha ship that Oscar was apart on. The message had been sent and the Earthborn group had already accepted their request. Getting some information from Sam. The Demi-god tier humanoid beast had been discovered on one of the Earthborn planets.

‘Just our luck that the Demi-god tier had to have been found on an Earthborn planet... couldn’t have been one belonging to the Cursed faction or the Greylash.’ Quinn sighed internally.

Although the good news was everything they needed to do was close by.

During the trip, Bonny and Void were looking over the video that they had uploaded. It was doing well and was currently the most watched and hot topic at the moment. The small little documentary they had done on the Cursed ship, asking about how the crew had felt living alongside the Cursed faction's V. The only problem was, the comments weren't exactly positive about the whole thing.

"Of course those from the Cursed faction are going to talk good things about them."

"Maybe they have some blood plant going on where they take their blood, or they're being forced to give those types of answers."

"What was the point of this? This whole thing feels like propaganda. Why are we just getting the view of the people from the Cursed ship? Did anyone else notice that the leaders hardly said anything?"

The Cursed faction was a strange group that always seemed to gather attention in one way or another. There were always people that felt their methods were contradictory so they didn't have the perfect record. Bonny honestly wanted to change that, but one video alone wasn't enough.

'The whole world is watching and wanting to know what you will do next, Quinn. You need to make them believe you can help them.' Bonny thought as she looked towards him.

Finally, the ship had arrived in the area of where the giant Bertha ship was, and it could be seen ahead, but there was something strange going on. As a fleet of ships had also come straight towards them, around ten small ones. These weren't regular ships either, or a commercial one like Quinn was currently flying with no weapons, these were ones that were agile and used for combat.

Then in front of them, there was a larger ship that was currently a quarter size of the big Bertha one. It was what the military had used in the past before the Bertha to transport a number of troops.

"This is Sergeant Malkuris of the Earthborn group speaking. I have been instructed by Head General Innu for you guys to make a little detour before heading to see the supreme commander. Please land on the ship in front of you beforehand."

Looking at the situation Logan went to console and looked at the radar around them. They could see that the fleet of ships went from the front and began to surround them in a type of circle.

“Quinn.” Logan turned around to tell him that this whole thing reeked.

“I know, something is up.” The other casually replied. The two of them were already making preparations to prepare for what was about to come. As Quinn went to grab something from a different room.

Then, all of the ships had finally circled around them. The lasers had lit up from each of the ships as they powered on.

“I will get rid of the V!” Innu shouted. “Fire!”

Seeing this, everyone on board was in a state of panic. Right now they were in the middle of space. If the ship was destroyed and they got shot down, they would all die in an instant. They needed to protect the ship, or Quinn needed to protect the people at all costs.

‘How the hell do I do that!’ Quinn thought, while he was still in the middle of getting ready.

“Doesn’t this ship have any weapons?” Void panicked as he ran up to the command console as well, but it really was just a commercial flying vehicle. Since they were travelling to a friendly zone, Logan had suggested they keep all the battleships on the Cursed faction.

“Don’t worry Quinn, I can deal with this one!” Logan said, as his eyes started to light up green, and a light was shining from his chest as it went all over his body.

‘Is this, Logan’s soul weapon?’ Quinn wondered.

My Vampire System Chapter 1132: Logan activate

With the amount of lasers that were pointed towards them, their small little ship would be destroyed in an instant. Quinn could probably save himself somehow using the shadow ability and at most a few others. However even that was a big if, and he didn't intend to leave anyone behind.

"These bastards, why are they attacking us?!" Quinn shouted in anger. He had already expected Innu to pull some stupid stunt to harass him, but he hadn't thought a head general could be crazy enough to outright execute the visitors.

Quinn quickly went to grab one of the space suits. It was quite fitting to the skin allowing the person to move about as they would do on earth, They also used a special jet pack of sorts on the back, that would allow for movement in space as well, but still the moment wasn't quite the same, and it would be near impossible for a single person to go fighting them all, but Quinn had to do something.

After putting on the suit that was all white in colour, he came back out and could see Logan at the console, his eyes glowing green, and the centre of his chest glowing.

'It's his soul weapon.' Quinn thought.

When the light diminished, Logan's hair was standing up and his eyes lit up green. His soul weapon was an enhancement type, which powered his abilities greatly and due to his ability it was quite unique in its own way.

"Quinn, I'll help you out!" Logan shouted, and soon Quinn was seen going through the airlock space, and exiting out of the spaceship. He quickly used the jets to propel him forward, and climb himself up onto the ship landing there.

'Damn it, it would have been useful to have learned how to use this thing during my second year of school.' Quinn regretted not having had this opportunity, as he slightly overshot where he wanted to go, but seeing a piece of the ship sticking out, he was able to grab on and pull himself forward.

A normal person with their strength wouldn't be able to hold on, as the force from the jet pack was too strong, but Quinn managed to do so with a single hand. He pulled himself forward to see all the ships surrounding them, but he noticed something else as well.

The outside of their ship was almost transforming into something. It started to resemble one of Logan's robotic spiders and then started to take shape in the form of a turret. This didn't just happen in one area but multiple areas.

Back inside the ship, Logan was concentrating hard.

"Bring me as many beast crystals as possible, I need to use them to power my weapons." Logan instructed, and Layla and the others were moving as quickly as they could as they headed into the storage to bring out the crystals.

Logan had figured out how to use his soul weapon a while ago, but the problem was it didn't seem that useful so he didn't really know how to use it for combat. His natural ability already allowed him to communicate with machinery and order them around.

Which was why he could show great power when he was surrounded by different types of technology and made it so his suits were made up from the small spiders. However, he couldn't do the same with other equipment.

He couldn't change or transform a computer into something else. His soul weapon allowed Logan to have complete control of the matter that he was touching, and also to turn it into a computer like system.

With Brock the two of them had practiced, to find a way this could be used. The easiest thing that Logan could do was to transform something electronic into his little spiders and then use them to form into something else.

Logan always had his own type of computer system with him at all times in the form of his suits. Which carried vital information with him wherever he went. He had multiple blueprints and designs of things he wanted to create.

Simply bringing up the blueprint and commanding the robotic spiders, Logan could turn these into them. What he also found was just like his suits which could be powered using the crystals, as long as he was touching crystals, he could also power whatever the small spiders turned into.

Temporary giving them the same effect. Whatever his spiders created, while holding the beast crystal it would essentially be the same level of beast gear for it.

On top of that there was one more thing his soul weapon could do, and that was transform non objects temporally into computerised objects. Something as simple as a book he could turn into a computer system to then be broken down into the spiders, either adding it to his own suit to create something significant or more.

This would use up more of his MC cells though, and would mean he would have less time to control things. For this reason, while he was on the ship that was already controlled using a computer system Logan was completely in his element.

He had transformed it to create five cannons, to combat those that were against them. He also changed his suit into a fourth form, which created a large thick tube on his back that would directly touch his skin as well.

This form was for when he was using his soul weapons. The others were placing the crystal into this tube and Logan was able to use the power of them all. As soon as the enemy fired out there shots. Logan did as well.

They both hit mid-space causing huge explosions. The attack was a little too close to the ship and it looked like they were going to get hit slightly, but with Quinn at the top, he had spread his shadow all along the ship, covering it from the explosion, then soon let it go again.

'If I didn't have as many MC cells as I do now, this probably would never work, and what the hell is Logan's soul weapon?' Quinn thought.

Still, they needed to focus on the problem ahead of them. The ships were too far for Quinn to hit with any type of attack, and the cannon's seemed to be equal in power.

However, when Quinn noticed that some of the turrets started to turn into something else, something Quinn recognised quite well.

'Are those... Mechs?! Is Logan controlling unmanned mechs now?!'

Half of the turrets were still on the ship, while the Mech's began to fly into space. While Logan was continuing to fire shots after his first attack, the shadow from Quinn could protect them like some type of shield, and the mechs could do the rest.

This made it so the enemy had to focus on one of two things. Either firing off and hitting the Mechs that were flying about, or the Cannons. No matter which one they would choose to focus on, the other would destroy their ship.

This had worked out perfectly. Some of the ships started to move to avoid the Mechs, but then a shot from a cannon destroyed it.

Quinn was blocking some of the shots being fired from the other ships with his shadow, while Logan continued to fire, controlling everything at the same time.

Since Logan's ability allowed him to communicate, he could program the mechs and turrets to act in a certain way, so there wasn't too much control he needed to expand on this part, other than the distribution of energy.

Eventually this continued, as the fleet's ships were destroyed one after the other, and finally only the large ship remained.

"Logan, can you hear me? Dock on board the large ship." Quinn ordered. "Bring back the Mechas. Let's take down whoever pulled this crap on us in person!"

Everyone inside the ship, as they watched what had happened, were relieved. They still couldn't believe how they had just managed to get out of that pinch. As for Bonny she was worried because she had never heard Quinn sound so furious before.

'I remember what Arthur told me. I can't allow myself to remain soft to the people who actively try to kill me!' Quinn reminded himself, as the ship rushed forward. It looked like the two were going to crash, but with Logan in control and with his soul weapon out, it seemed he could do all sorts of things.

As it slowed down and the two of them were connecting. Logan could override the other ship's system, and forcefully opened the docking bay. Then finally they had finally landed inside.

Still on top of the ship, Quinn looked at all the panicked workers who were inside.

"SPEAK!! WHO THE HELL ORDERED THIS ATTACK?!" Quinn demanded to know.

My Vampire System Chapter 1133: An upgrade in powers

Inside the ship, many of those around Logan wanted to hug him as he put his soul weapon away. He was kneeling on the floor, gasping for air. In fact, Fex actually went up and hugged Logan in a bear-like grasp.

"We made it man, you are the coolest little guy out there!" Fex said, but it was clear that his shaking of Logan was just making him sick, and Layla eventually had to tell Fex to stop.

"I hope that idiot didn't shake you too much," Layla said as she placed Logan in one of the operating seats near the command centre. "Seriously though, you were really amazing. I've never seen you do something like that before. Was that your soul weapon?" She asked.

"Yes, any object I can control with my body, after breaking them down into my little machines. They can then be used to create whatever blueprint I have." Logan explained. No matter how tired he was, he was always willing to tell people how his little inventions worked.

"Wait, anything? So those little mech robots we saw, could you have created a bigger one, or even made the whole ship into a giant fighting Mech!" Fex shouted, still having not calmed down.

"Yes," Logan replied. "The only reason I didn't was because everyone was still inside. I can use those robots to even improve my suits, just as long as I have the crystals to back them up. I guess it's an advantage because I can keep changing the forms, unlike when beast weapons are produced, but a disadvantage since the beast crystals energy will be completely used up."

They understood what Logan was saying. They could see that the crystals they had given Logan no longer had the bright glow they usually would have. They were the crystal that was also meant to power the ship as well.

While everyone was busy celebrating, the ramp could be heard being dropped from their ship. Two people on board were eager to go out. Bonny and Void who had their camera and his drone rolling.

“What are you doing? They just tried to kill us?” Shiro said, still not understanding why the Earthborn group would have attempted such a thing. He was a little afraid to step off the ship.

“That’s why we need to catch everything,” Bonny replied. “Quinn is still out there, and if I was him, I would be pretty pissed at what just happened. If that’s the case, then who knows what is going to happen to whoever is responsible. If we don’t get the truth out, then the world will only know that the Cursed faction had attacked the Earthborn when that is not true at all.”

“Don’t worry about that,” Logan said, having recovered a little as he got up from his seat. “This ship has an auto-record function. I thought something like this might happen eventually. I managed to record everything. Including their voices on the intercom before the attack. I’ll pass you the video along, and you can make a nice edit.”

With the ramp down, everyone decided to head off the ship along with Bonny and Void, and they could see Quinn standing there with his shadow behind his back.

Fex was carrying Logan on his back. They couldn’t leave him behind in the state he was in. He had his Dalki hand, but who knows what could happen.

“Is no one going to answer me?” Quinn asked, his voice echoing off the metal. “You just attempted to take our lives, and I can’t even see the person responsible?”

The men were unsure how to act at that moment, but there was one thing for sure. The fleet they had just sent out, all the men on board had been killed, and they knew what Quinn was. They started to remember the speech Innu had given to them all beforehand.

“They are not like us! They are not human but V!” Innu said. “If you give them a chance, they will take not only your life but that of your family as well without a second thought! Look at what happened to Oscar, to Sach. This was all because they chose to trust the V!”

Due to these words ringing in their head, they immediately started to attack with their multiple abilities. The Earthborn group was composed mostly of the original military personnel, so the majority had the once military exclusive earth ability.

However, they could do nothing but watch their attacks hit the large shadow that seemed endless to them. They could see everything sinking into it and then being redirected to a different place. They attempted to even attack those behind Quinn, but the shadow would rise behind them before they could do anything.

“A monster, we can’t hurt him! He’s a monster!” They shouted as they continued on.

Quinn then looked at them all with his eyes glowing red and was suddenly in front of two of them up on a ramp above.

“Sleep!” Quinn commanded. The two felt drowsy as something took over their heads and collapsed to the floor.

“Get out of the way!”

“Move!”

Quinn continued with simple commands as he walked from the docking bay and continued to head towards the command centre. He would continue to use his Influence skill controlling each one of them while at the same time not lifting up a finger. Only the shadow would be used to stop the attacks.

“Hey, are you getting all of this? He is somehow able to control them all with just simple words.” Bonny whispered over to Void.

She was worried how this would play out if the world saw how strong Quinn was, but at the same time, something else stood out as well, and it was the fact that Quinn hadn't hurt a single one. He just had just incapacitated them via his orders.

[Your Influence skill has levelled up]

[When using the Influence skill no longer requires you to keep eye contact]

[The skill can now be used in a wide range]

[Its effectiveness depends on how close one is, how fearful they are, and the user's charm stat point.]

It was a skill Quinn didn't even know could level up, part of the reason he hadn't used it that much in the first place, but on this ship, he had used it more than he had expected.

'It's a bit vague with its explanation, but let's see how it goes.'

Finally, he had arrived in front of a sealed door that led to the command centre, but with Logan, it didn't matter; he could unlock it. Even if they couldn't, Quinn could bash it open with his fist.

As the door was unlocked. the open area of the command centre could be seen. Inside, there was Innu in his full beast gear surrounded by ten men, ready to use their abilities and weapons.

"Attack him!" Innu shouted.

"Everyone, lie on the floor!" Quinn commanded, with his eyes glowing red, and in an instant, everyone in front dropped to the floor, as if an invisible weight had been put on their shoulders.

All but one. Innu was resiting the command, his legs shaking.

"You can stay up," Quinn said, looking towards him.

“Haha, I knew you were like this. I knew it was right to try and get rid of you!” Innu said, looking at them all. “I’m trying to save all of our lives. I will gladly sacrifice myself and all these men again if it’s to save the human race!”

“Has something gone wrong with him?” Shiro said as he could tell something wasn’t quite right. It was like he was almost purely afraid of Quinn and the others.

“From the first time we met, I’ve never liked you,” Quinn revealed. “But back when the Dalki attacked, before you knew what I really was, you had come by my side and helped me fight them. We both worked together side by side, killing the Dalki.”

“What’s so different now? Shouldn’t the enemy of your enemy be your friend? Why should it matter if I’m human or not?” Quinn asked.

“Isn’t the answer obvious? You were working with the Dalki! Who would believe you could kill that many? Now I also understand, why you came to the school! You knew they were going to attack. You even told us beforehand! I should have known then. That fake Richard Eno you sent... the two of you... no, ALL THE V MUST BE WORKING TOGETHER!” Innu shouted and continued to laugh while shaking in fear.

He knew at this point that he could do nothing to stop Quinn.

“Back then, I saw you save the children and help me fight against the Dalki,” Quinn said “Deep down, you must have thought to have done the right thing for the sake of humanity. I can’t exactly fault you for that.”

For a brief second, Innu had stopped shaking as there was a sign of relief ahead.

Was Quinn really going to let him go? Maybe he had been too rash with this attack, but he could build up trust in the future. He could get rid of the V easier then. His only mistake had been that he had never expected them to fight so well in space, but as long as he was kept alive, he could come back again.

Quinn looked him in the eye again and clenched his fist.

“However, when you attacked our ship, you didn’t just go after my life. You went after the life of everyone on that ship. My comrades who are all dear to my life and I can not allow that to happen again!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1134: Defeated by fear

Right behind Quinn, everyone was watching him waiting to see what he would do. It was an important moment, but they trusted Quinn with whatever decision he was about to make.

At the same time, Bonny and Void were hot on the group’s heels, filming every moment of what was happening. So far, Quinn had been calm enough to not kill anyone on board the ship.

‘Will he also let Innu go, even after attempting to kill us all. Honestly, if it wasn’t for Logan and Quinn back there, me and Void would have died as well!’

Quinn was furious, he could have snapped Innu’s neck there in front of everyone, and he was angry enough to kill everyone involved as well, but he also knew that somewhere deep down, the soldiers were just scared and felt like this was the right thing to do in their minds.

However, a certain person had told them to pull the trigger, amplifying the fear of them all, and that was Innu himself.

With him being filmed, Quinn had to be careful how he acted. He couldn’t just act on rage. Sure he could ask Bonny and Void to delete this part of the video since it wasn’t broadcasted live. They would probably comply as well, but then there would be questions.

Either way, people would find out about what happened today, and if they only had footage of the first half, then rumours would start to spread. Often rumours were worse than the actual truth.

‘What do I do with him! I can’t just let him go free!’ Quinn thought, his eyes still glowing red. The anger and fear were being directed to Innu. No words had been spoken, so he wasn’t silent due to the

influence. Innu knew that if he made a wrong move or tried to escape, he would be finished off in a second.

‘Do I let Oscar deal with him, but we don’t even know if Oscar will wake up again? I could use his body, then we wouldn’t need to hunt for another humanoid beast. This person is trash and useless anyway, but that would mean Shiro would have to get involved. I wouldn’t want to put Shiro through that.’

In the end, Quinn thought it might be best to allow Oscar to deal with this one if he was awake, but Quinn looked into Innu’s eyes one more time, and he could tell. The hatred in his eyes was the same way people felt towards the a and how Quinn felt towards those who had bullied him for a long time.

Innu wouldn’t give up here. He would continue to fight. For some reason, he truly hated vampires.

“You really hate us that much?” Quinn asked as he walked over to Innu, and whispered telling him to kneel. Due to them making eye contact, the influence skill was a lot more powerful, and Innu couldn’t fight it, falling to his knees.

At this point, Innu knew that perhaps his time was up.

“I’ll kill-“

“Shut up!” Quinn said as he walked over and leant down to eye level with Innu. At the same time, he made sure to use his body to block the camera. Quinn had then cut the tip of his finger and shoved it quickly into Innu’s mouth before the camera could see anything. Then just before leaving, he stabbed the top of Innu’s thigh with his clawed hands, falling to the ground. Not a large enough wound to kill him.

[The Blood ritual has been activated]

“Let’s see what you are like when you become the thing that you have grown to hate,” Quinn whispered.

Innu's eyes opened wide, and he wanted to shout, to say something but the order from before had kept it shut.

"I wondered why you hated us so much," Quinn said out loud, standing up and making it clear so everyone could hear him, including the camera. "Oscar and Owen have both claimed that the Cursed faction, although we are V, we are on your side. So why did you suddenly attack us? Why did you disobey Oscar's order?"

While Quinn was saying all of this, something strange was happening to Innu's body. He could feel it changing inside him as he spoke. The pain was real, but the influence skill was still working, and his mouth refused to open.

"However, he didn't tell you one thing, that us V who are on your side can tell if there is another one among us. Of course, we have been open in telling everyone who we are. Now that we have come here, I have come to realise that the reason you so badly wanted to make out why you were against the V, is because you are one yourself. You were trying to fool everyone!" Quinn said.

He walked up to one of the men who was on the floor and lifted him up. He then cancelled the influence skill on all the others that were on the floor as well. They were slightly confused by Quinn's words, so they didn't act out.

Quinn's plan was working, and he waited just for the right moment when the evolution was complete.

He cut the palm of the soldier's hand, the blood dripping onto the floor.

"Do you remember what Oscar said, that the V reacts to the scent of blood? You see, we V of course are not affected by this, because we did everything we could to stop ourselves from being consumed by this curse, but some of the other V that are working with the Dalki, are consumed by blood like a lust."

Breaking the influence skill off from Innu, his eyes started to glow red, as he became a vampire for the first time. He had never experienced the smell of blood before. Quinn had purposely made wounds in his thigh so he would experience blood loss, craving for the blood even more. At the same time, due to what had happened, he was consumed with anger, unable to control his emotions.

His eyes had turned red, he could feel the fangs on his body, and immediately he started to run towards the soldier by Quinn's side.

Quinn, doing nothing, watched the shoulder, drew his beast sword, and was ready to attack Innu.

However, before he could get close, one of the other soldiers blasted Innu with an energy blast, an ability.

"It's true, Head General Innu was a V in disguise!" He shouted.

Innu didn't know what was happening, but he just wanted to get the blood in front of him. With his mind a little clear, he attempted to use his ability, but nothing was working. His Mc cells were gone.

"Everyone, fire!" the soldiers said. They threw and used their abilities one after another. With Innu having nothing, he was hit over and over again. It didn't take long until he eventually died there on the spot, falling to the ground, unable to heal.

'He was the one who had planted the fear of the V into his own men, and now he has died due to that very fear they had. Although a bit cruel, this death is fitting for him. I can't say it wasn't deserved.' Vincent said as he tried to rationalise why Quinn had done what he had done.

The others were left a bit stunned, they were unsure about what to do, and due to Quinn turning Innu, they thought maybe he would get him to work for them. They could also feel the bond activating as they were near Innu, but the ten high-level ability users that were at the level of sergeants had defeated Innu far too quickly for them to be able to do anything.

"Did you get everything?" Quinn asked, turning to the camera Void was using, and Void just nodded along.

"Remember, although we are V, we are on your side, and we are also the best in fighting against them. You may not like us, but we are something that you need. Let's go see how Oscar is doing." Quinn said as he went off.

Bony and Void stood there along with the sergeants, not knowing what to do, who to trust.

'How will the people react to this?' Bonny thought.

My Vampire System Chapter 1135: Finish the story

It was clear that the soldiers in the room were at a loss of what to do. They stood there staring at each other, waiting for the next one to speak up, someone to take command. It was a rare sight, seeing their feelings were clearly being put out on display.

Right now, the reporter inside of Bonny wanted to speak to each of them. To see how they were feeling, but this story wasn't over yet. Sure she could make a video about the Cursed with what had happened so far, but she had a feeling that there was still a little more that Quinn was going to do.

"Come on, we have to film the rest of this story." As the two of them turned around, she said to Void and went along to catch up with Quinn and the others. Who's next destination was the Bertha ship to see Oscar.

They didn't have long to travel on the ship. They could even see the Bertha through the window ahead of them. Yet, there was still this awkward silence between all of them who were there until Layla had to say something.

"Quinn, he tried to kill us. I don't think what you did was wrong, and I guess you did it for us. A way so our hands wouldn't get dirty." Layla said. Trying to cheer Quinn up, but honestly, he wasn't thinking about Innu too much, but what would happen after.

"What will become of the Earthborn group, right?" Logan said as he was enjoying a nice lie down, making his chair vertical so he could see only the ship's ceiling. He was hoping that they wouldn't get any more surprises along the way.

"The main leaders of the Earthborn group, there is a good chance that none of them is fit to lead anymore." Logan went on to explain. "We don't know what state Oscar is in, but apparently such a bad

state that he allowed something like that to happen. Then his daughter Samantha is probably heartbroken, and Sach, we don't know what he is like either.

"From Sam, it sounded like Innu had temporarily taken control of the Earthborn group, and Quinn...sorry not Quinn, but due to his own actions, Innu has ended up dead. There is no leader of the Earthborn group currently, at least no clear one. What tends to happen in a situation like this is either someone takes over they can all agree on, or there are internal disputes until a new leader rises."

Internal disputes at a time like this. The Earthborn group was the largest group out of the three. If they were to fight internally, then a large chunk of their attack force against the Dalki would be gone. As usual, sooner or later, the blame would get pinned on a particular faction.

"I wanted to ask this question as well." Bonny piped up. "Sure, we all know that Innu was the one that attacked us first, and although I don't believe in killing others, he did attempt to take all of our lives. You handled it well, not harming the crew members and only dealing with the single person responsible.

"But I can say this because I am looking through things with a clear mind. During times of war, people's minds aren't so clear. Did you have something planned for after dealing with Innu? You must have known what state the Earthborn group would have been in."

"Cool your head and just chill with all the questions, hot stuff." Fex said, as he went over to Quinn and wrapped his arm around his shoulder, "And you did good dealing with the situation. If you had done it vampire style, every single one of them would have died, so they should be thankful.

"The Cursed group can just take over the other army groups. We already have two of them, and Nathan and Hayley trust us, right? So why won't the others?"

Bonny scoffed at the naive thought from Fex, but what she didn't realise was that, unlike the others, Fex was a vampire from birth, not understanding how humans felt.

"You saw how Innu reacted. Do you think he's the only one that feels this way?" Bonny asked, "The Dalki are an alien race, and for some people, they view the V as the same. Do you think they would be happy with the Cursed faction taking over? You should see the comments on the videos I uploaded if you really want to see what people think about you."

Tapping her watch a few times, a large holographic display appeared, and then several smaller screens filled with comments had come up. Everyone could now read them and see what the world thought of them.

It was heartbreaking for the group to see the comments. All they had done was risk their lives fighting in hopes to save the world for these people, and this was their reward.

Sam knew that seeing such things would demoralise them, and he also knew that their group was far too busy to even have time to look at such things. This was why he had kept it to himself. The only other person who knew about the negative comments was Logan.

“Screw them all!” Fex said. “Quinn, you do this to help all of us. You know what you’re doing is right, and we know that everything we have done is for the sake of these people. These keyboard warriors can shove the damn thing up their backside.”

“So this is what people think about me?” Quinn was relieved and just smiled. “You know, for some reason, it doesn’t hurt too much. Maybe it’s because when I was a level 1, I would be called trash, worthless, an oxygen stealer, but now there is attention on what we are doing, I will take this as a good thing, and Bonny, don’t worry about the Earthborn group.

“We will solve this issue one way or another.”

When they had finally arrived on the large Bertha ship, their treatment compared to what had happened with Innu was utterly different. There was a group of people there to welcome them, but something odd was going on.

“Quinn, I am so sorry!” A man said as he charged in with a few others. Pushing past the initial introduction group. This man was someone that Quinn hadn’t seen for a while and was one of the generals at the second base, Nathan. He now also worked under the Cursed faction and was in charge of one of the army groups given to them.

“We could see what had happened, on our radar, but Innu’s rank, he’s..” Nathan said in a panic. It was clear that perhaps there was already infighting going on in the Earthborn group with Oscar gone. Sooner or later, if nothing was done, there would be a collapse.

In the first place, the two army groups that belonged to the Cursed faction were given by Oscar. They weren't wholly loyal to the Cursed faction. If it wasn't solved, the Cursed wouldn't know who to trust either.

"It's okay, Nathan. We could tell that Innu had used his own personal group for the attack. I will just assume that no one else knew about it." Quinn said.

When he finished, Nathan was peeking his head, looking at those coming off the ship as if he was expecting someone.

"Where is Head general Innu? We will bring him in and give him the appropriate punishment. I will talk to Samantha--"

"He's dead," Quinn said. "Bonny has the video of everything that went on and can explain things later. Please take me to the others right now, we should worry about those who are alive."

Although Nathan was shocked, he felt like it had to be true. He wanted to ask more questions, but there was a certain air around Quinn and the others. It was as if the group were in business mode.

"I understand," Nathan said.

The group were quickly brought to the medical bay. It was mostly filled with white light, and the walls were coloured the same. There wasn't a single speck of dirt anywhere in the rooms, and they were now walking down a hallway with several large oval doors.

"First, I will take you to see Head General Sach since he is a bit more responsive," Nathan said. Putting in a code by the side of the oval door. A beep was heard, and the door slid down into the ground.

They could see that Sach was being cared for by machinery mostly, while only two people were left to monitor him, but he was conscious as he turned his head to look at the others. Still. His body was not in a good state. His arms and legs were completely wrapped up in metal casing.

"Quinn," Sach called out, a little excited, but then his mood seemed to dampen just as quickly.

“It looks like you put up quite the fight against the Dalki to end up in this state,” Quinn said, trying to lighten the mood. Although Quinn wasn’t close to Sach, he was close to his other side, his role-playing teacher in the power fighters game.

“I wish. I tried everything on that Dalki, but there was nothing I could do.” Sach replied as he tried to move parts of his body, but it was useless. “You know, I thought my martial arts were the best in the world, and when I saw you using them, I felt even more so.

“As long as someone could keep advancing the martial arts, improving upon it, nothing could stand in my way until I met the five spiked Dalki. My ability strengthens my body, and since then, I have never broken a bone in my life.

“Now, look at me. My whole body has been shattered, and they say it’s due to my ability that they can’t heal it or put it back together? Nothing can work.”

It was a sorry state to see someone like this, and all of them imagined if they were put in the same situation, they would feel the same way.

“Quinn,” Sach said as he looked up at him. “I...I already asked you one favour, and it’s shameful for me to ask you for another, but I heard you were able to heal Owen. Can you heal me?”

For a second, Quinn could see the hope in Sach’s eyes. Quinn placed his hand on top of his legs to see if Sach was suffering from the same thing as Owen was, but this was different. He wasn’t partially infected. As the doctors said, it looked more like his indestructible ability made it so healing techniques wouldn’t work.

Abilities and the human body were a strange thing, and honestly. The way his body was, he wasn’t sure that technology could heal this unless he was to turn mostly into a robot man.

From the look on Quinn’s face, he could tell that it wasn’t an option. He hadn’t given up yet.

“I heard from a report from Samantha,” Sach said. “That the teacher known as Fex was badly injured, and when he was given blood, all the wounds on his body had healed. I’m assuming he is a V. If I was turned, would I be healed?” Sach asked.

This was the second part of the story Bonny was looking for, as she and Void continued to film it all.

My Vampire System Chapter 1136: The odds

After seeing how Innu reacted after finding out about what the V were, Quinn had been sure that most other people would share his underlying fear of the V. So much so that he never imagined that Sach would voluntarily ask to be turned.

Unfortunately, there was an underlying problem even if Quinn did agree to Sach’s request. He had plenty of spaces left to turn others, numbering 18 as of now. Whenever someone Quinn had turned died, one of the available slots would return to him as well. Turning Innu hadn’t caused any problems in that department, but the troublesome fact was that he had no way to control what Sach would turn into.

‘You were a little lucky when you turned Innu, but you can’t guarantee that Sach will turn into a vampire as well. He could turn into something else.’ Vincent cautioned Quinn, just reconfirming his worries.

During the mass turning of Paul’s men one of them turned by Quinn had ended up a Wendigo, and they had no choice but to put him down before he could cause any damage to those around him. From his experience the most common results were Halflings and Vampires depending on the strength of those turned.

Still, there had been a few who had turned into something different. In Innu’s case, Quinn had already been prepared to use his mind control to make him act a little crazy should he have turned into anything but a vampire.

The only rare form that could be explained away was something like a Dhampir, but so far Erin had been the only one which meant the chances were incredibly low. Either way, the problem was that there was no guarantee that Sach would turn into something that was more helpful to him.

“Sach, you are a skilful person and you taught me a lot.” Quinn said. “I’ve used your techniques to help me get out of quite a few pinches lately. The thing is, there are a lot of things about us that the world doesn’t know or understand. If I turn you into one, it means that you will be thrown into that world.”

A huge grin appeared on Sach’s face hearing these words. “The fact that you said that, means you can heal me if you turn me, you’re just worried about what comes after that fact. Quinn, look at me. Does it look to you that my life could be better if I stay in this state? Whatever happens to me, I can’t imagine it being worse than not being able to help the people around me. No matter the result, I won’t blame you!”

Putting himself in Sach’s shoes Quinn would have requested the same. He often wondered what would have happened if he would have had a choice in the matter of accepting the vampire system. If Quinn had been asked whether he wanted to accept it, especially with what he knew about it now, if he would have agreed.

The answer was of course he would.

It was thanks to it, that he could play an active role in deciding humanity’s future. Something he always wanted to do.

“Before we do anything, I’ll explain everything to you, including the risks, and only then should you make your decision.” Quinn stated as stretched his shadow across the floor and it had risen in front of Void blocking the cameras view.

“I think that means he wants you to turn it off for now.” Fex whispered to them.

Bonny looked at Void and nodded. They had already gotten a lot, and she couldn’t fault Quinn for wanting to keep some things hidden from the whole world. She just hoped that at some point she would be allowed to show these things.

At the same time, the two doctors were told to leave the room as well, with Nate escorting them outside and making sure they didn’t listen in.

“Some important things to note.” Quinn started to explain. “Once I turn you, I will become your turner. That means you will be directly under me and part of my family. There will be a connection between us that you will be able to feel. If I order you to do something it will be nearly impossible for you to disobey, even if it might be something you might never do as you are now.”

“The reason why I’m telling you this, is because of your position in the Earthborn group. If they find out I’ve turned you into a V I’m afraid it will sour our relationship with everyone. Right now, there is a good chance that Oscar and Samantha can’t recover, and I doubt they would be happy with you taking up such a position.”

“So you want to keep this a secret?” Sach addressed the core of the issue. It was tough because if he did get found out, it would be natural for them to assume he had been a traitor all along and there would be no getting out of that one for him.

“Indeed, although in your case it might be easier than with others.” Quinn replied. “I healed OWen with my Qi, and I can claim I did the same to you. You see, once I turn someone, their abilities disappear. Due to your ability being so unique the others shouldn’t notice that it has disappeared. On top of that, there is a good chance that if your ability is an original that you might still be able to relearn it, but I can’t guarantee that. As a silver lining, you will be able to learn another one if you wish, as long as you are compatible with it. Finally, for the last part, let’s talk about all the bad things that come with being a vampire.”

Everyone was listening in carefully, Bonny and Void couldn’t believe the changes that someone would have to go through. Losing the ability one had built up for so long, would be heart crushing for many.

Quinn went on to explain, about the bloodlust he would feel, how they would help him with that, he then later whispered how they would overcome the weakness of the sun. The reason for whispering this was because he still couldn’t fully trust the reporters that were behind him, and if they knew about this large weakness it would be trouble for them in the future perhaps. The last thing the two of them talked about were the possibilities of what he could turn into.

“I see.” Sach said after taking everything in. “So you can’t just go around changing people as you like. The bad types of vampires...have you ever seen someone turn into them before?”

“Yes.” It was clear that this one single word was connected to painful memories, but he needed to make sure that Sach knew what he was getting into. It would also be unfair to give him percentages of how likely it was to be turned into something bad or good.

“Let’s do it. It sounds to me that there are more upsides than downsides to this.” Sach answered.
“Perhaps I can surpass a point I could never before. On top of that, if I do become a vampire I can sniff out all the traitors that are within the Earthborn group.”

Although this was something Bonny desperately wanted to report on, she knew for the sake of humanity, she shouldn’t. This would help the two groups come closer together. It was better for people to believe the Cursed faction leader was also able to help Sach get back on his feet like he had done Owen as well.

Initiating the blood ritual, Quinn did the same as he always had done. When the process had begun there was something different this time compared to all the rest before. There was no screaming coming from Sach on his part.

It was clear he was in pain, but fighting throughout it, he didn’t want to make any noise.

‘He shouldn’t become a ghoul or a wendigo, but I can’t guarantee that to be the case. Most likely if he is like Leo, Paul, and Innu, then he should turn into a...’

[Blood ritual successful]

[You have successfully blooded a vampire]

The tension from Quinn’s face was gone, as he saw the successful sign, and that there was going to be no trouble from what Sach would turn into.

“You have a really strong will, all the others screamed at the top of their lungs when they were turned.” Quinn praised him.

“With that kind of willpower, I’m sure it should be easier for you to fight against the craving for blood. Take this.” Quinn handed him a flask that appeared from his hand through the shadows. “Drink a little bit of I, and you should start feeling better. It doesn’t look like your body has healed yet. Drinking a little bit at the time will help with your control. At first, you will want to gobble the whole thing up with the

state you are in now, but if you can resist it, then in no time you will have no problem being around others even when blood has been split.”

The group were quite pleased and glad that they now had another strong new ally that could probably help them just as much as Paul and Leo did, maybe even more so working in the Earthborn group. Just as they were getting ready to leave, Sach called out to Quinn.

“Please, try your best to save Oscar, but honestly with the state he is in...you might not be able to.” Sach said.

All of them had left the room, and now it was time for Nate to lead them into the next room. He typed in the code by the oval door once more, and there they could see it instantly. A large glass tube, similar to what the Dalki had been kept in.

They could see Oscar’s head floating, and his life’s heart beating, with only half of his torso remaining. With the state he was in, it was questionable if he could even be turned.

My Vampire System Chapter 1137: The Supreme commander’s fall

From Sam’s explanation and the words that everyone else had said, Quinn and the others had believed to have a rough idea of Oscar’s current state. However, confronted with the reality of seeing Oscar float about in a strange green coloured liquid, it was beyond all of their imaginations.

The Supreme Commander had no limbs, a strange mask covering most of his face that was meant to help him breathe. Only the left side of his chest was intact, his neck still connected to his head, which had to have been the only reason he was somehow still alive in that condition. Quinn wasn’t even sure that with what was left turning him was an option, much less if it could help him recover.

Upon entering the room they noticed someone else as well. A girl with long hair, who was sitting on a chair with a table in front of her, her head knelt down on the table facing away from them.

“Samantha hasn’t left this room ever since she got here. She’s convinced that her father will just wake up at some point and she’s determined to be there when it happens.” Nathan explained as he sighed.

Samantha didn't seem to have noticed their presence. From the looks of it, she was either asleep or too lost in her own thoughts.

"He's still alive, right?" Layla questioned, since it was hard to believe anyone could survive that much damage.

"We... actually aren't one hundred percent sure on that. We've put him through various tests, but there seemed to be no more activity in his brain. Honestly we aren't even sure what happened that day. Sach seemed to have seen everything, but still hasn't spoken about it much. Our best guess is that One Horn has allowed him to live. Perhaps he got bored playing around with him, or this is some sort of sadistic ploy to let us watch Oscar die, we don't know."

'Live' seemed to be a strange term given Oscar's situation. They had already thought Sach had it rough but if there was no activity in one's brain, it also meant the only thing that was keeping him alive was the machine.

Suddenly a thought went through Quinn's mind. The Dalki not finishing him was possible, but there was no way they would allow the humans to keep his weapon.

"His Demon tier weapon?" Quinn asked, he knew it was insensitive to the situation, but it was something important for all their survival.

"Lost. It's either the hands of the Dalki or the V now." Nathan looked down as he explained the situation.

One of humanity's strongest weapons, was now in the hand of their enemy. Before the news wouldn't have been so bad, as it was well known that the Dalki were unable to activate beast gear. They could still wear the items or use them as weapons, but they were unable to bring out the full power. However, things changed with the V joining their side as they did not have such a weakness.

Eventually, the group started to walk forward, even Bonny and Void put the camera down. It felt insensitive to film Oscar in the state he was in. They didn't want to shatter his image as the Supreme Commander and as the one person who had done the most for everyone in the battle with the Dalki.

Stepping forward were Quinn and Fex, while the rest followed behind, but at a distance. It would be quite intimidating for a single person to be faced with so many new faces all of a sudden.

Shiro started to speed up, as he walked behind Quinn. From what he had heard so far, there was a good chance that maybe he was the only one that could help Oscar in his situation.

As the footsteps got closer, Samantha finally turned her head. She had dark heavy bags under her eye, they were puffy and swollen, and the white in her eyes was all red.

“Fex?” Samantha uttered the name of the first person she already knew. She spoke in a tired voice as if the girl had just woken up. “I’m sorry for telling everyone, about your secret, I didn’t keep your-“

“It’s okay...the whole world was going to find out sooner or later anyway.” Fex shook his head as he gave her a light smile. The news had already gone out and Samantha obviously had far bigger problems to deal with. He went a bit closer to see how she was dealing with things.

“When’s the last time you’ve eaten anything?” The vampire asked as he noticed how frail she looked compared to the last time he had seen her. Hearing this she soon realised that it wasn’t a dream she was in, and looking next to Fex she could see Quinn, the leader of the Cursed faction.

‘Food, energy, wait, are they really here!’ She thought, as she picked herself up from her seat, but her vision was going dark from standing up too fast and having stayed in one position for too long. As the closest one to her, Fex gave her a helping hand.

“Help him, please!” Samantha ‘shouted’, but even her voice lacked any indication of strength. She sounded sore from the endless amount of crying and screaming. No one should have to see their father like this, and she also blamed herself for being there, but unable to do anything when everything had happened.

“You can do it, right? Quinn, you can do anything. Please help him!” She pleaded again, moving to Quinn and she practically threw her body weight on him, she was so weak but it did nothing.

He looked at her. He had never seen someone in so much pain before. A bond between family, one from a daughter and her father was something he never had.

The problem was, Quinn didn't wish to give her any false hope. Honestly, he didn't know if there even was anything he could do. Before coming here, he had agreed that if Oscar didn't want to be turned then they shouldn't do so against his will while he was unable to make a decision.

"I'll try!" Shiro said, clenching his fist and he looked motivated. "Quinn, please let me give it a shot."

For a brief second there was hope in Samantha's eyes, but what could this little boy do that all the learned doctors and those with healing abilities couldn't?

Quinn nodded as this was the best method. A way to get to Oscar without having to turn him. A small part of Samantha had already given up on ever seeing her father saved, but the bigger part of her clung to hope. She was willing to try anything.

For Shiro to use his ability, he needed to touch the head, which meant he also needed to get into the glass tube container. Nathan ordered some men who were stationed outside to help out, as they brought in breathing equipment that looked similar to a diving suit, but there was no gas tank of sorts, since everything was done through the large helmet he had on his head.

Then from above, he was elevated by a platform, like an elevator. All Shiro did was take a step forward, as he splashed into the liquid and now was face to face with what was left of Oscar.

"I don't know if I could do that, being chucked in like this." Layla mumbled as she realised how brave Shiro was. He hadn't been in the battle long and had only recently learnt the ability. Then, he was thrown into the deep end, with one tough request after the other and Shiro was the one who had actually volunteered this time.

Pressing his hand against Oscar's head, Shiro closed his eyes and concentrated. His hands started to glow as they did before, and a few seconds went past. Which soon turned into minutes, and then finally....

"Get Shiro out of there Quinn!" Logan shouted. "He's going to kill himself if he uses his MC points for too long and runs out of energy like last time!"

Quinn quickly went to grab Shiro out from the container, jumping and hanging onto the edge, before reaching his hand and pulling on him. Just as Logan had suspected. Shiro had already passed out from overusing his ability.

The rest of them waited for a while for Shiro to wake up, as they took him out of the strange wetsuit. During the time, they kept monitoring Oscar, but no change was showing up on the equipment at all.

Eventually Shiro started to come to, and he could see all the others had gathered around him. He looked towards Oscar in the container, and his face started to be filled with tears.

“I’m sorry... I tried... I tried to find him, but I couldn’t.” Shiro cried. He could see how much pain Samantha was in and he wanted to do his best to help her father. He had been quite confident he could do something, but after saying all that, he had done nothing but waste everyone’s time and give them false hope.

“You tried your best, don’t cry, I know...my father would be happy to see this many people try their best to save him.” Samantha said in an attempt to comfort Shiro, but she was now sobbing too by his side.

‘Is it really the right thing to do?’ Quinn thought. ‘To just sit here, and do nothing? Wait until his mind comes back. What if it never comes back. What if he’s like this until the end, unless I try to do something?’

‘Oscar, would you be happy seeing your daughter in this state? Sach, told me to do what I can to help you. It’s okay, right? You can hate me later if you want, but I can see that the world still needs you!’

Quinn climbed into the tank, and this time he was in the liquid, but he wasn’t wearing any special type of suit like Shiro, nor did he need the mask as he simply held his breath shut. It didn’t even feel like much of a problem to him and it was possible he could have stayed in the water for hours.

Quinn then released his blood intending to start the blood ritual. When a sudden message appeared.

[Error]

[Blood ritual is unable to activate]

My Vampire System Chapter 1138: Use my body

[Error]

[Blood ritual is unable to activate]

[It is not effective in this situation.]

Despite Oscar being in front of him, this was the first time that Quinn had gotten this type of message. He had been worried that turning him might not be enough to save him, but he hadn't been mentally prepared that it was actually impossible.

He tried a second time just for good measure, perhaps he had done something wrong. Unfortunately, it only resulted in the same error message appearing once more.

'Again!' Quinn repeated in his head, as he attempted to activate it through the system, yet nothing changed.

'Quinn, I don't think it will work no matter how many times you try. It is clear that there is some type of underlying problem, just like when Shrio tried, in this type of situation there is nothing we can do.' Vincent said.

Hearing these words from a man Quinn knew to be many times wiser than him, who also knew far more about the Vampire World, his hands started to feel weak as he started to sink down in the liquid. There were those that could possibly help, like Tempus or the second leader's ability but there were reasons problems with getting the vampire world involved.

From the outside, Samantha could see this and judging by the lack of any change in her father's condition as well as the defeated look in Quinn's eyes, she understood that all hope was lost.

Immediately, she fell to her knees, there was no more energy in her body and they slammed into the hard ground. This time not even Fex was ready to catch her, but as her body was becoming limp, he did manage to catch her with his strings before her head hit the ground.

“We need to get her some food and energy. I don’t think staying in this place is helping her at all. Force feed her if need be, just make sure she gets it!” Fex shouted, as he ordered the other soldiers as if they were his own people.

Due to his assertive tone the soldiers didn’t even question Fex’ order. A doctor who had been on standby came to look over Samantha. Her diagnosis was that Samantha lacked enough sleep, hadn’t eaten or drank anything and was mentally exhausted.

Since there was nothing they could do for Oscar, the group had followed into a larger part of the medical bay, where there were several beds laid out, but at the moment there weren’t any other patients currently being treated. It wasn’t like the private rooms that had been used for Sach and Owen.

Here, a lot of them sat on the seats that were spread around the room, thinking about what they had just seen. Others were trying to comfort each other at the same time as well. While Quinn, and few continued to stay by Samnatha’s side, who had a drip that had been placed inside of her body.

“You really couldn’t turn him?” Fex asked, breaking the silence.

“I don’t really know what happened. I don’t know if it’s my fault, or maybe something else. I was sure since he wasn’t completely dead, that there should be at least a chance to turn him. Perhaps he would have turned into some type of undead class, but as long as he would have improved we would have been able to deal with it then.” Quinn replied, yet all those worries and thoughts before seemed to have been for naught.

When the door was heard opening again, the person who was entering came as a surprise to them. It was Sach who was already back up on his feet and was moving about. He quickly threw the flask over to Quinn who caught it with ease.

“Nice reflexes.” Sach said with a smile, but it soon went away when he looked at Samantha. “I heard what happened when you went to visit Oscar. I assume you all being here means you couldn’t do to him what you did to me?”

“Quinn, I’m sure you tried your best. Nobody will blame you for it not working this time. All of this isn’t your fault in the first place. It’s mine. If only I was stronger, he wouldn’t have had to try and hold off the Dalki on his own. Oscar wouldn’t have to have gone through all of that.”

Shaking his head, Sach went to take a seat along with the others.

“Sach, Nathan told us that you were there when this all happened. Maybe you know what was going on. How did the three of you even survive such an attack?” Quinn asked. “If even Oscar ended up in that state, surely he could have killed you all, and why didn’t you tell us before.”

Right now, certain pairs of eyes were gone. Bonny and Void, the reporter duo, were currently going around looking at the ship and conducting more interviews. Nathan and his group were back to doing their duty, as they had a ship to run, and temporarily he was taking the commanding role.

“I didn’t want to say much before because honestly I don’t really understand it myself.” Sach replied after he made sure nobody was listening in. “You see, me and Samantha were both fighting One Horn. It was clear from the beginning that we were no match for him, but at the same time we were unable to turn our backs.”

“At this point the humans who we assumed were V and the Dalki were both fighting against us. If we ran away, then it meant everyone else would have died as well, and I’m not sure One Horn would have let us in the first place. That’s when Oscar showed up to reinforce us.”

“He told us to run away, but we didn’t listen. After seeing Oscar fight with the Demon tier weapon against the Dalki, it quickly became clear that they were stronger. I ended up in the state that I was in, and Oscar was getting pulled apart by One Horn, while Samantha could do nothing but watch.”

“He had a giant grin on his ugly face, like a young boy enjoying the fact that he was ripping the wings off a fly. He could have killed him straight away, but he didn’t. Samantha eventually got the courage to charge forward, hoping to somehow stop the Dalki from killing her father, but I knew it was useless.”

“Honestly, I had accepted that we would all die down there, but then someone had picked up the Demon tier weapon. It was a girl who looked to be from the shelter. She had long black braids, and she held up the sword pointing it towards the Dalki.”

“She told One Horn that he should let us go. It didn’t make any sense, but for some reason he complied. He had just defeated Oscar wielding the Demon tier weapon, but for some reason he didn’t seem to be willing to defy that girl.”

“It was then that I noticed that none of the humans that had been attacking us had any of the traits that were described as the V. I didn’t understand anything, which was why I didn’t want to say anything to anyone yet. The fact that humans were working with the Dalki, and that they were listening to them no less.”

“After that interaction, all of the Dalki stopped attacking, allowing us to retreat, and barely come out of it alive. Eighty percent of our forces had already been dealt with.”

Hearing all of this, Quinn couldn’t quite put his finger on what was going on either, but if those groups of people were really the ones that Arthur had stayed with, then maybe there was a reason why they had listened to the Dalki.

‘Are the humans living there actually working with the Dalki? But then why did they save Oscar and the others? Why would someone as powerful as One Horn listen to a girl... unless she was perhaps the only vampire there?’ Scratching his head, there was just too much to think about.

After the conversation had died down a bit, they started to ask Sach more details about the fight that went on. Their number of forces, the Dalki’s strength and more, but Shiro and Sil were busy having their own conversation from before.

“It doesn’t make any sense.” Shiro said as he looked at his hand. “I went into the black space, just like I did with you, so doesn’t that mean I entered his mind? So why couldn’t I find his consciousness? Did I not go deep enough?”

“The others said you were drained Shiro, your ability probably won’t let you spend more time in there or go deeper.” Sil said. “Your ability seems strong but maybe it needs to be even stronger.”

Hearing this, Shiro was kicking himself for being overconfident. He still couldn't believe that he had given them all hope, and he felt like he was to blame. But through their conversation and seeing how Shiro was, it had given Sil an idea.

"Remember what I just said, about how maybe your ability wasn't strong enough, what if I said there was a way to make your ability stronger, by using my body." Sil offered, placing his hand on his own body.

My Vampire System Chapter 1139: Switching bodies

It took a while for Shiro to process what Sil had just said. What exactly did he mean by 'his body'? Whatever it was, he had certainly caught his attention.

"Do you mean, you're going to try and use my ability to search for Oscar instead?" Shiro asked, still a little confused. He did know that Sil could copy his ability, and amplify it by using the MC cells from other powerful users.

"That won't help in this situation. Your ability is too unique. It doesn't share any similarities to any elemental ability or anything else I've used before so I would have to learn how to use it from scratch just like you. You're the only one with experience." Sil shook his head as he explained.

"No your cra...it might have some problems." Shiro stopped himself mid way as he was about to say the forbidden C word among those from Blade Island. It was a warning that Quinn had given him, and he was glad he caught himself.

"Are you saying that you want to copy my ability, and then switch minds so I'm the one that is controlling your body?" Shiro asked to confirm whether he had correctly understood Sil's intention, since he considered the plan to be very risky.

Sil just nodded, in place. "I can guess that Quinn wouldn't allow this, so we have to try and do it without him. Look, even if it doesn't work, you need to practice your powers on human bodies, including moving their minds. It's not like a mind can just get lost. Worst case, I get put somewhere but you will still have the ability to help out."

Judging by how quiet Shiro was, one could tell that he still wasn't convinced to give it a shot. Sure, if it did work, Shiro felt like he could do something amazing, but he had already failed once. He was afraid that he would fail again and that something could happen to Sil if it did.

"There's already three of me in this body." Sil continued to persuade Shiro. "If you don't want to switch minds, then just temporarily go into mine. The worst case scenario then would be you being in my head and together we can always put you back. I know you want to help, and I want to help you Shiro!"

An internal debate was going on in Shiro's head, and that's when he heard a few groans coming from the side. It was Samantha as she was finally waking up after resting and getting some needed nutrients in her body.

"What happened, where am I?" She asked as she touched her head. Samantha had a huge headache and it felt like someone was pounding the inside of her brain with a hammer. Everything that she had put to the back of her mind was coming back to bite her at once.

Then when she saw everyone who was in the room, she started to remember what had happened again. "No. No, no, no." She repeated, readily shaking her head. It was as if saying that word over and over again might allow her to escape the reality she was currently facing.

The others ran to her side to try to calm her, but nothing they were saying or doing was having an effect.

"She's just going to hurt herself more if things carry on like this!" Fex sighed, as he bound her arms and legs with his strings, but through her struggling the needles from the drips had been displaced.

"I'll help!" Layla offered. At least in these situations she had a surefire way to deal with the problem for a short time. Seeing the fog above her head and surrounding her body, Layla consumed it all, placing it inside of her. Unfortunately, it wasn't a permanent fix. Hopefully as time went on they could help her quell the negative emotions that would be returning in due time.

Having absorbed her emotions, Layla now experienced the same pain as Samantha. As for the previously struggling girl, she felt at peace for a few seconds which was enough time for her mind to relax and once again return to sleep just like before.

“Is that going to keep on happening?” Quinn asked, frustrated that he had been unable to do anything for her father.

“Different people deal with trauma in a different way.” Layla answered. “Honestly, she was already beaten down before all of this. I guess she was holding out still hoping in some way, but now...”

Seeing all of this, Shiro had made up his mind. He felt partly to blame for getting her hopes up, so he wanted to fix the problem.

“Let’s do this. Do you have enough abilities already stored up for your MC cells?” Shiro asked.

“It’s become a habit since school, to touch people as much as possible so I can see their strength and what abilities they have.” Sil replied.

“Wait, don’t Quinn and the others have super hearing? Wouldn’t they have just heard everything we said? How do we keep it a secret?” Quickly shutting his mouth, Shiro realised that their ‘secret’ plan had long since been foiled.

“Don’t worry, I have been around them long enough to know how good their hearing is. One of the abilities I’ve obtained was Sound barrier. It’s been active the moment I came to you.” Sil replied with a light smile at Shiro’s antics.

With the two of them agreeing, they left the room making an excuse that the two of them needed to go to the toilet. Quinn, seeing this, just thought it was a little cute, that the two were now attached by the hip together, although he did feel it was a little strange for kids that age.

‘Guess girls aren’t the only ones who go together.’ Quinn thought, his mind occupied with other things.

Finally out of the room, they immediately headed towards where Oscar was being kept. There were guards standing outside the door, and Shiro was struggling with what they would do, but Sil didn’t go into the room, and instead walked past the door and took a left turn down the hallway.

When Shiro followed, he couldn't see where Sil was, until he popped half his body through the wall.

"Another ability?" Shiro asked, thinking that it was kind of cool to be able to use so many different abilities at once. Deep down, as someone who had only recently learned an ability, one which wasn't really suited for fighting, he still wished he had learned the Blade's ability and this was just making him even more jealous.

With the two touching hands, Sil was able to make the two of them phase through the wall allowing them to enter the room from a different side to the entrance. There they could see Oscar, still floating.

"Alright, it's time." Sil said, walking up to Shiro and closing his eyes, unafraid waiting.

'Why is Sil so unafraid of doing this?' Shiro wondered. Still, Shiro had to remind himself why he was doing this.

Pressing his hands on Sil's head, they started to glow. Trying to do what he needed to do seemed harder than just entering one's consciousness, where he had to connect the two dark spaces in their heads together.

It was as if he had to activate his ability twice, and then shove one room into another so now they both shared rooms. Then when Shiro could see Sil, he tried explaining to him, asking him to move far away from each other.

When they were no longer at a distance where they could see each other. Shiro now had to also disconnect these two rooms.

When Shiro had opened his eyes, the first person he could see was him, or more accurately his own body that he just had never seen in this way before.

"It worked!" Shiro said, pointing and now looking at himself from all sorts of different angles. "So this is what it looks like when people look at me through their eyes. It's nothing like looking in a mirror at all. Do I really look so...wimpy?"

Sil looked at himself and could tell that it had worked as well, and just gave Shiro a thumbs up.

“I knew I could trust you. After all you were the person that promised to bring back Vorden and Raten.”

Now the real task awaited them. Doing the same thing as before, Shrio put on the wet suit that was still in the room along with the helmet, and was ready to dive in. Activating the elevator he was raised to the same height as the tube, and walking forward he let his body sink in.

At the same time, the alarms started to ring, the whole room started to slash red.

“Quick Shiro!” The others will be here soon.

As he said that, mere seconds later Quinn and the others had entered the room. They could see Shiro on the ground floor next to some type of control panel and someone else in the glass tub.

“What is Sil doing in the container?!” Fex shouted.

Touching Oscar’s head his hands started to glow.

“Come on, this has to work!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1140: Do you want to live?

Ever since the Earthborn group had learned of the V, safety measures had been put in place. Guards stationed on the outside and an alarm system set throughout the private medical rooms, which was why as soon as the alarm sounded, Sach knew straightaway what was going on.

At the time Samantha had been so worried about her father that she had requested that only a certain few people would be allowed in. After the group had left, only the patrolling guards were allowed on the inside. As a second precaution the alarms had been reactivated.

When they barged into the room, everyone had expected to see some of the crew members who turned out to be one of the V, but they were now shocked to see two of their own, Shiro and Sil. Making the scene even more bizarre was that Sil was the one inside the tank full of water, pressing his hand against Oscar.

“What are they trying to do? Is someone controlling them?” Sach asked as he was ready to rush forward and pull Sil out of there. Before the group could move though, a certain boy stood in their way with his hands spread out.

“Stop, Shiro is doing something incredibly important right now. We can trust him!” ‘Shiro’ explained.

Some of them were left puzzled over ‘Shiro’s’ words. Did he hit his head and mistake the person who was with Oscar? But how could he mistake it for himself? At the same time, Sil realised that he couldn’t do much if he did want to stop them.

Shiro’s body was weak and the only ability he possessed wasn’t suited for combat. However, lucky for him there was one brainiac among their group who was quick to put the clues together.

“Did the two of you swap bodies?” Logan asked. Judging by the situation the two of them were attempting to bring forth Oscar’s mind. Either Sil had copied Shiro’s ability, but in then the mix up of names didn’t make sense, so it could only be that Shiro was currently inside Sil’s body and was making use of it.

“What! Are you planning to try again?” Fex asked, and all Sil did was nod.

— —

After activating the ability Shiro could see himself in the black room alone. There was no one around and he was able to walk more freely without much trouble. Before he could feel some part of his energy slipping away the longer he was in the space for.

If he was concentrating too hard, it would be unnoticeable which was why he would often push himself past his natural limits causing him to faint on the outside.

'Is this because of Sil's ability? It feels like I'm not being affected using my powers at all, I could stay in here forever.' Shrio thought.

Without the burden of a time constraint he could focus more freely on trying to find out just what had happened to Oscar. He tried to search for the black space. He looked everywhere, even moving his body to different areas but he saw nothing.

Unlike with Sil, where he could see two floating balls of energies that contained their own spaces inside, it truly felt like Oscar's mind had just gone. But if that was the case, then why could he appear here at all?

'Is there really nothing we can do?' Shiro worried. 'Even after going behind Quinn's back, and using Sil's powers?'

Trying to think hard, Shiro eventually needed to try something, and for some reason although he didn't think it could help, he started to activate his Qi energy. Something that every human had, and something he had been practising.

Even though it wasn't his body, Shiro knew the process, allowing him to access a bit of Qi energy inside of Sil's body.

It was strange because technically his body wasn't in the blackspace only his mind, so he wasn't sure if it would work, or how useful it was. When activating it outside though, a connection was made as his hand was touching Oscar's real body on the outside.

For a split second, something appeared in the black space for the first time, or more correctly he felt the presence of something, albeit very vaguely.

'It's over there!' Shiro instantly moved to where the anomaly had occurred. It felt like a sense of hot and cold, as he moved further away the energy was weaker, moving to the right area the energy was stronger but still nothing could be seen.

Until he had reached a point where the energy felt strongest in the black space.

'But there's nothing here?' Shiro couldn't see anything, but he was certain the energy was here.

'No, I need to think of this another way. If this would be all it takes, then I could have done it with my own body, I need to use the ability better.' Shiro started to think back to what the notes had listed. The connections inside that he needed to make to travel deeper into the consciousness,

He focused on activating his MC cells even more, going deeper into the person's mind. On the outside his hands were glowing so bright, that the light was blinding the view of the others from the outside.

Then there was finally a change of scenery for Shiro. He was no longer in a black space but was in a white space. In front of him was Oscar in all his glory. He had no injuries and was in his usual military uniform.

"I don't quite understand what is going on." Oscar said. "But at the same time I feel I do."

"Oscar!" Shiro shouted, ready to hug the Supreme Commander. All of his efforts weren't in vain, he really was somewhere inside the mind of his but it was deep. Too deep to control his body.

"I work for Quinn, he sent me here to come get you, we are trying to save you!" Shiro said everything at once, afraid that any moment the other could disappear again. Oscar lifted his hand to stop him there and started to shake his head.

"I assume if you are here you have an idea of what happened to me. You seem to have some type of ability that accesses one's mind, but even if you do bring me back, what of my body. It is beyond healing." Oscar sighed as he looked down on himself. Right now his appearance was pristine, but he remembered that had happened to him on the outside.

"Quinn!" Shiro replied quite confidently. "He managed to save Sach even though he was in a bad state! The doctors couldn't help him but Quinn did, I just know that as long as we can bring back your consciousness, Quinn will be able to get you back!"

There was a slight pause from Oscar before answering and then a small smile as if he had made up his mind.

“I assume, his way of saving me isn’t by usual norms. If others couldn’t and he can, does that come at the cost of turning me into the same thing as him?” Oscar questioned. “When the others around him claimed they had been turned, not out of choice, I assume Quinn had been put in similar situations?”

“I’m honored that you must have put in all your effort to try and save me... but I do not wish to be saved. Not like this.”

For someone who was as young as Shiro, nearly seventeen years of age, he couldn’t understand. Why would someone refuse getting saved when there was the possibility. Oscar could tell this from the look on his face as well.

“I have grown tired of all this fighting. I have given it my all, throughout my life and now... I just think now it’s my time to go. I hope you respect my decision.”

“What about Samantha? Do you have any idea how heartbroken she is? Don’t you want to at least see her for a final time, say some words or see her off?” Shiro asked, hoping to convince him.

“I can’t deny that seeing my daughter again does have a certain appeal. However, because she is my daughter I know that she is far stronger than she looks. I know she will come out better from this. I understand that you are trying to convince me, but I have already made up my mind.”

“However, there is one request that I have now that you have presented me with the opportunity. It has been a long time coming, but if possible, I wish for a final talk with Quinn. That boy has a lot of questions on his mind, and he deserves to have them answered, especially as he is this world’s future. I need to pass the mantle.” Oscar requested.

Shiro was trying to think of other things to say to convince Oscar, but if his daughter wasn’t enough to get him to reconsider, he didn’t know what was.

‘How can I face the others again? This time I was actually this close, but I have failed again.’ Shiro thought. Still, there was one more chance, as Oscar had requested to talk to Quinn and he was hoping at least Quinn could talk some sense into him.

'It's all up to you Quinn.'

My Vampire System Chapter 1141: Passing on the Mantle

With everything done, Shiro returned back to Sil's body inside the container. He easily pulled himself out, noticing his well developed muscles.

'Oh yeah, that's right, this isn't my body. I always thought he was more scrawny like me, but boy was I wrong.' Shiro then tensed up Sil's muscles and pressed on his hard abs, his finger was practically hitting a solid wall showing he was in top tip shape. 'It's so much different than when I use the ability in my own body. I don't even feel tired after having to search for Oscar. How can one person have so much power?'

After experiencing it for himself he was starting to understand how the Blade family had been able to secretly rule over the Big Four in the past. The things they could do with all those different abilities and the fact that their powers could multiply meant that they would be scary enemies.

'There is still that Hilston guy everyone is worried about out there. If Sil is already this strong, does that mean he is even stronger?' Shiro gulped as the thought crossed his mind. The Blade family leader would not only have had decades more time to gather multiple powerful abilities but also that extra time to have experience with them.

When Shiro went down he was expecting for everyone to start yelling at him and to get told off, but it appeared that Sil had already made everyone aware of what they were attempting to do. When Quinn walked up and held out his hand, he squinted, almost flinching.

"Are you okay?" Was the first question that came out of Quinn's mouth. It wasn't a telling off like he had expected and Shiro nodded in response.

"Wow, that's kinda cool that you can make people swap bodies, and they can use the ability in that body?" Fex questioned. "Does that mean I can see what it's like to be a...a girl for one day?" Now his imagination was running wild.

“Does the ability work on Vampires, maybe it’s like Sil’s?” Logan theorised.

Despite everyone’s comments, Quinn was just happy that there weren’t any problems between the process. In all honesty he had been afraid that something might have happened to Shiro and Sil when trying to do something like this, which was why he had only made him run the tests on wild beasts, rather than humans.

However, it was inevitable that at some point Shiro would have had to attempt to do this, and for someone to do it with their own mind, Quinn couldn’t imagine how scary that would have been.

“You should have said something instead of running off.” Quinn berated Shiro. “You were lucky that it worked out, but what would you have done if something went wrong? If something happened to you, then it would have been my fault for getting you dragged into this whole mess in the first place. Promise me that next time you try something like that you do it under supervision.”

Shiro understood his concern, but didn’t really know what to say. He understood that just seeing Samantha in that state and wanting to help her wasn’t a good enough excuse. Fortunately, she didn’t seem to be with the others either. In the end, Shiro just nodded weakly.

“What’s done is done, but we need to make sure we don’t have to take these huge types of risks in the future. So did you get any results?” Quinn asked the question that was on everyone’s mind.

The conversation between the others in the background died down after this as they were listening in carefully.

“I...I connected to him.” Shiro answered, which sounded like good news, but Quinn could tell by the sound of Shiro’s heartbeat that something was up. If Shiro could have connected to him, then why was there still no active signs on the monitoring equipment.

“He said...he wanted to speak to you, Quinn. I think it might be for the best. Right now I can use my ability to touch both of you at the same time, and pass you on along with me, so you can have a conversation. It was his... he said that was his last request.”

At first Quinn thought that it was quite a risky thing to do. Shiro hadn't figured out everything about his ability yet, since he hadn't been using it for too long, but he did have Sil's powers at the moment granting him access to far more MC cells than he could imagine, but what confined him was the fact that Shiro had stated it was his last request.

'Why would he say that? Unless...'

It was because of this, Quinn nodded. His last request wasn't to talk to his daughter, or anyone else, but to Quinn. The two of them hardly knew each other.

The others knew that once Quinn had made up his mind, he would go through with it, so they sat back and just waited. At this time, arriving into the room were Bonny and Void. From the sound of the alarm they had known that something would be up, but instead of an attack all they could see now was Quinn and 'Sil' entering the glass container, with the younger boy floating in the middle of the container touching both of them.

While activating the ability on Quinn, something else could be felt by Shiro for a second, but choosing to ignore this he continued with his task. Having done it once, it was easier than before and with Sil's power supply it really felt like it was no trouble at all bringing along Quinn as well.

In barely any time they reached the white space, and Oscar was seen smiling as he looked at Quinn. "Young boy, thank you for fulfilling my last request." Oscar said, before turning to Quinn.

"Last request? Do you really not plan to come back?" Quinn asked Oscar. "Even if we can save you? Even if the people out there need you after everything you have already done? Don't you want to watch the end of this all? You could be there when we get over that last hurdle!"

The tone of Quinn's voice was surprisingly aggressive. Shiro hadn't expected him to be like this, so what was the reason?

"Quinn, I have done my duty ever since the first war. I'm not the first one to fall in battle nor do I have grand hopes that I will be the last one. You can't even imagine how many of my friends, peers and subordinates I have outlived ever since. I have done everything I could to grow stronger to save even one more person. Every time I have fought I have done so with my life on the line knowing the risk and

the consequences and I ended up like so. I'm just glad that my sacrifice at the end could save my daughter as well."

"For me, my time is over. My fight is finished, even if that means I don't get to see the end of it. I hope that my will, and what has happened to me will encourage others just like you to pick up my mantle and continue the fight. I know why you're upset, I looked into your past, Quinn."

"As a person who has grown up with no ability, your life must have been tough in the world we currently live in. I wouldn't be surprised if at some point you would have blamed me. As the Supreme Commander I must have appeared as the living embodiment of how the world had turned out, but the truth of the matter is that the people decided it to be this way."

"With the war against the Dalki upon us, the strong stood out, the weak relied on us and some people decided to take advantage of that. As a single person I was unable to change what everyone wanted and expected, so I did my best to contain the strong, so the war between ourselves wouldn't break out when it mattered most, but we all know how that went when Truedream disappeared. "

"That was the moment I realised I needed to change things to make up for what I have failed to do beforehand, but then like a shooting star, I could already see the younger generation attempting to fix the problem I was responsible for creating. And I am glad you all did a far better job than I ever could." Oscar looked deep into Quinn's eyes, as one of these new people he was referring to was him.

"This is my answer Quinn. I do not wish to be saved." Oscar explained.

Having been around many different types of people, Quinn could tell that at this moment, Oscar had steeled his resolve. Much like himself, he was stubborn and it looked like he had made this decision since long ago.

At the same time, Quinn now was struggling with what he was trying to fight. The person at the top wasn't Oscar. Wasn't he meant to be some type of evil controlling villain that was forcing the weak ability users to live through hell, only caring about the strong? Yet, it just didn't feel that way. The end of his goal, was this...

"Quinn, I wanted to speak to you, because you are one of the people that everyone will have to rely on in the future. As such, I wanted to inform you of a few things. Given your special position, I have

naturally looked into your past, trying to find out who you really were, but I have come to the conclusion... that even I was unable to unearth anything.”

“For example, the apartment, school fees and your allowance you received when you were younger were all actually provided to you by an anonymous donor. I only later found that some of my people had been told to tell you that we were the ones providing you this service but that’s not the case at all.”

“Ever since you were young, someone has been looking out for you. It is said that you have no living relatives, so why would someone go that far, but I recently learned that there is one.”

“Richard Eno...” Quinn mumbled. Was it really him? Did that also mean that the military weren’t the ones that complied with his family wishes and had given him the system book. Did Richard actually have it all along? Had Richard been watching him since he was young, a child even, then what about his parents? If he was watching them, why didn;t he protect them and give the book to one of them during the first war?

Thinking about this, Quinn thought about the Quest he had received, to learn more about the Talen family.

“Do you have any more information?” Quinn asked.

“I tried to search for what was relevant, but as someone who didn’t really leave behind a strong impression until after military schools there was not much I could find. I am sure that Samantha must be struggling at the moment, but I know she will come out stronger from this. Take this as a selfish request of a father, but try to help her cope with this until she gets better. Perhaps you can ask her to help you retrace your past for you afterward.”

“I also have to burden you to explain to her that my wish is to say goodbye to this place. The longer she tries to stay attached to this form of me, the harder it will be for her to pull away, which only delays my peace.” Oscar requested.

Shiro now knew this was the real end of Oscar. Not even Quinn would be able to convince someone like that to come back to them all. These were the final words of the war hero, and Shiro was there to listen to them, even though he felt like he was unworthy of it all.

“Goodbye, Oscar. You can rest now, you did what you could, and I will try to do the same.” Quinn said as he offered the man one last handshake. Both looked each other in the eye, Oscar with the kind smile of a senior and Quinn with the bitter smile of someone, who wasn’t ready to let go of the hand.

Alas, eventually Shiro reminded Quinn that using his ability took a toll on his body, even though they both knew that shouldn’t be the case since he was currently in Sil’s body. Still, Quinn let go and both of them left the white space.

When Shiro made the disconnect, they found themselves in the liquid again, and raised themselves out of it. Both of their faces were filled with thoughts, and even though the others were dying of curiosity to know what happened they let them be until they talked on their own.

However, Shiro was left wondering one more thing as he looked at his hand, and looked at Quinn’s back. ‘I’m sure of it, after seeing inside of Sil. Why were there two consciousnesses inside of Quinn?’

My Vampire System Chapter 1142: After the same thing

The conversation with Oscar had left Quinn with quite a bit to think about. Especially the information he had learned from him about his past. There had indeed been times when Quinn had questioned his upbringing, the things he had been told and how his parents had left him with a book he had never seen or heard of before.

‘Did Eno really support me during that whole time? It wouldn’t be the first time he had hidden things from me.’ Quinn wondered. Of course asking Eno was an option, but since Quinn didn’t fully trust him and the old man hadn’t come forward on his own to share that information, it would be safer to find out about his past as a member of the ‘Talen family’ on his own. If he was unable to find anything in the end, it would mean he would have to prepare himself to confront Eno.

‘I really don’t want to do that.’

Speaking to Samantha would be the best next step, although that would have to wait until she was in a better state of mind. He didn’t know how long it would take and the need to tell her that her father had requested to be put off life support would surely not expedite the process. Unfortunately, the Cursed

group still had other things they needed to attend to. This short stop had turned into quite the event already.

'I wonder, is Richad still on the island? Or would his helpers have arrived by now? I could send someone to the island to look for him, but there is no guarantee he is still there. Mona has also returned to the place she was kept before, yet I have no idea where that is. Damn, why didn't I make sure I had a way to reach out to him?' Quinn thought, conflicted that he had completely overlooked that issue up until now. He was just so overjoyed to finally get rid of him.

He looked up to the others who had so far been waiting for him to speak and began to recount his conversation with Oscar. He told them all about Oscar's wish and Void filmed Quinn conveying Oscar's last words, while the remains of his body eerily floated in the background.

The reactions to this were mixed. Some were able to sympathise with how Oscar felt, while others, albeit not openly, chastised him for having given up too soon. To them it felt that as one of the World Leaders he wanted to run away from his final duty. As for Sach, he was full of tears and he swore to himself to do everything in his power to make sure the Earthborn group would continue to fulfill their duty, even without Oscar.

Despite Quinn wanting to move on, there were a few pressing matters that needed to be solved before they left, so he proposed to hold a meeting. Sach and Nathan, representing the Earthborn group both instantly agreed. Technically the two of them were also part of the Cursed group now, but in a way this would just make things easier to control and should ensure that no more incidents like Innu's attack would occur.

Samantha had woken up again, but everyone felt it would be better to let her rest some more. As such, nobody had told her anything about this meeting. It took place in one of the many empty rooms of the ships, but it was apparent that this was an impromptu occasion. Some were leaning up against the wall, with most just standing as they talked to figure out everything that they would need to do.

"I think it's a good idea, but we'll need to find someone trustworthy to organise the rest of the Earthborn leaders for now." Sach said after they had come to a conclusion.

The plan they had agreed on was to have Sach board the Cursed Ship and stay there for a while. Sam would then get someone to teach him everything there was about being a vampire, controlling the bloodlust, getting his sun ring and learning a few of his new skills.

It was the best place for him to learn all of these things. The excuse they would give was that there was a need to discuss the future of the Earthborn groups now that Oscar and Innu were gone.

“I can keep everything we said here a secret.” Nathan said. “But what about the reporters? They will eventually have to break the news to everyone. It’s clear that they wish to show the Cursed faction in the best light but there needs to be a good timing for all of this. At the same time we can’t wait too long, otherwise rumours will start to spread and people will find out that way.”

So much had happened, and so much shaking news would have to be shared with the public. Head General Innu trying to kill the Cursed group, turning out to be a V and perishing, yet that all paled to the revelation about everything pertaining to Oscar.

“The Earthborn group is still in your hands.” Quinn stated. “I will let you and Samantha decide when she is full of mind. I think it would be for the best to only inform the public about Oscar, once there is a proper replacement for him. Someone the people will be able to accept.”

“That being said, we will have to tell Samantha sooner rather than later if we want her to recover from this. We also need her approval to turn off the machines for Oscar. She at least deserves to say her goodbye to him, while he is still with us. As for the reporters, they should reveal the truth of what has happened with Innu first. That will keep the public busy for the time being.”

“They have decided that they will be travelling back to the Cursed ship, just to film a few more things before doing so, I have left it down to them to coordinate with Sam. He is the best person to figure out the timing and what to show and what not to show.”

With all the things worked out, the group were now moving on quickly. Bonny and Void had gotten on board one of the military ships to head to the Cursed faction ship alongside Sach. The Head General had left one of his trusted sergeants who would be working closely with Jane, Oscar’s top assistant in charge.

He had also requested to receive regular updates on Samantha’s situation, and wanted to inform her personally about Oscar’s choice. Before they left, Quinn checked the ones that were left in charge just to make sure they weren’t V. Even after sweeping the whole ship, they couldn’t find any at all.

Still, Quinn reminded them that it was possible they had someone with an ability that could control others. This meant they still needed to remain vigilant even if there weren't any V on the surface.

For this reason Sach left one of his people behind to look after the base. There was no problem with that approach, since he would have been the next best person for the job anyway. After all, ever since Nathan had been asked to work for the Cursed faction, there had been a general dislike for him among those from the Earthborn group.

Everything was just better this way, and so the group was ready to focus on their original task, the hunt for the Demi-god tier beast.

Shiro and Sil had returned to their original bodies, and they were now all on the same ship they had arrived in. The reporters had left, but Nathan had chosen to accompany them.

"You guys will need to be careful once we arrive there." Nathan warned. "I know we're all on the same side, but this shelter originally belonged to Head General Innu's people. It's a military shelter so there will be mostly military personnel and their family members. Even though the news hasn't been spread publicly, I'm sure that someone must have already informed his people that Innu is dead. So don't be upset if they start treating you a little rough."

Quinn pulled out the mask from his dimensional space and held it in his hand. It was the Mud mask given to him by Peter.

'I guess it might be time to use this. It would be troublesome to get into any more unnecessary fights. Especially against people who are meant to be on the same side.' Quinn thought. After speaking to Oscar and having Sach on his side, he now felt that the Earthborn group was more so a part of them. They weren't the enemy, there were just a few bad apples that had spread their thoughts to others.

"Also, they seem to be suffering at the moment. It's one of the few planets where the shelter is still hunting and collecting crystals. But their collection rate has been dropping. On top of that they have been getting into skirmishes here and there." Nathan explained.

"Skirmishes, with people?" Logan asked, overhearing the conversation.

“Indeed. For some reason there are members of Pure on the island as well.”

The others looked at each other, and Quinn had a dreaded thought on his mind. According to Leo, Erin and some information from Brock. Pure were trying to create a beast they could control.

If this was true, did that mean Pure were after the very same beast they were?

My Vampire System Chapter 1143: Chasing i

It had been a while since Quinn had heard any news from Pure. He had been far too busy dealing with his own problems. The last time had been concerning a matter that Leo had been personally dealing with, so for the longest time they had been at the back of his mind.

‘Are they really going down this path? Making the same mistakes the vampires did?’ Quinn thought, but then again, they probably had no clue that the Dalki had been the result of the vampires trying to create a food supply for themselves. ‘This Demi-god tier hunt might be harder than we thought if they are also involved.’

Quinn was still internally debating whether he should appear he should disguise himself or not for when he arrived at the Earthborn shelter. In the past it would have been fine for him to turn up and they would have respected him as a World Leader. However tensions were currently skyhigh between all groups after the reveal of the V’s existence, especially among those belonging to Innu who had just lost their figurehead.

The final nail in the coffin was the fact that Pure was there. Their movements might drastically change if they were to learn that the leader of the Cursed faction would be turning up, since they still should hold a grudge for Quinn killing one of their single digit leaders.

Ultimately, Quinn went to the toilet on board the ship and placed the mud mask on his face. It started to wrap around him and change his body. A few seconds later, the one who exited the toilet wasn’t Quinn, but ‘Chucky’, a person so plain that he wasn’t memorable to all but his close friend.

He had pondered over what the others should call him now. Just calling himself Chucky would be confusing, and looking in the mirror, Bucky was the name that kept repeating in his head for some reason. Bucky cleared his throat so everyone turned around and could see the new improved him.

“What do you think of the new Bucky?” Quinn asked the group.

“Shouldn’t you have picked a different name than the person you look like?” Fex asked.

Shaking his head, Quinn was getting quite tired of answering this question, but he couldn’t blame the other since he had made that mistake a few times himself.

“His name was Chucky, so Bucky is indeed a new name.” Logan clarified in Quinn’s stead.

When things were starting to quiet down, Shiro noticed that Quinn was looking in the mirror quite often to check out his new appearance. Shiro understood that feeling well since he had recently been in Sil’s body. It was an indescribable feeling looking at oneself and to see someone else entirely. However, that wasn’t the reason why Shiro was closely watching Quinn. When the other turned he suddenly saw Shiro standing right behind him.

“Quinn, I was wondering if you had a bit of time. I would really like to talk about something, just the two of us.” Shiro requested. Seeing the look on his face, and with them having nothing else to do Quinn accepted. The two of them entered the eating area, which had a see through automatic glass door, however it was sound proof. Allowing them to talk and eat if they wished in peace.

“What’s on your mind, Shiro? You aren’t usually the secretive type, so it must be important.” Quinn honestly asked the other.

“Back when I helped you speak to Oscar I had to use my ability on you as well. I felt something strange inside of you, it felt like there were... two minds in you. It was similar to Sil, but since I was busy connecting you to Oscar I didn’t really get a good look at the situation. Do you mind if I check again?” Shiro requested.

This had come as somewhat of a surprise to Quinn but not a complete one. The way Shiro had explained it, he already had a couple of ideas of what the boy might have seen.

'Do you think that the other mind he saw was me?' Vincent asked, who sounded far more shocked than Quinn. The old man knew that it couldn't be the Boneclaw. Familiars didn't occupy their partner's mind but left behind a permanent summoning seal on the body of those they had made a contract with.

'I mean it's either you or the system, but I have a feeling it's more likely to be you.' Quinn replied.

In a way to Vincent it somewhat made sense. These were the two possibilities but either one would work. Either Vincent was part of the system, and the system itself had already bonded with Quinn. It worked using his mind, so it wouldn't be too surprising if it had formed a pseudo consciousness, which was what Shiro had seen.

Alternatively, Vincent came with the system when Quinn had obtained it. Coming together but not really being a part of each other. The logic here stemmed from the time the vampire had lost Vincent for a brief period of time. Back then his ancestor had remained in the tombs below, while Quinn still had the system in full use.

If it was the latter case, then there was a higher chance that Vincent could be removed from the system without Quinn suffering any side effects. This was one of Vincent's other concerns when Quinn had offered to help him gain a body of his own using Shiro's ability. He had never really brought it up in the meantime, because he had honestly thought it would be impossible.

Now that the truth was getting closer and closer it felt unreal.

"Shiro, thanks for telling me that, but that won't be necessary. At least not now." Quinn replied. "You're no longer in Sil's body, so it will just tire you out, and we will need you at full power soon. I already have a good idea of what you saw, so you don't have to worry. It's something or rather someone that won't harm me. I will tell you about it when the time is right, okay?"

Shiro felt relieved after hearing this. He had been worried that it might have been something Quinn might have been unaware about. The boy had theorised that it could be something that all vampires had, another darker side deep down. Perhaps it could have been the mysterious ability of their enemy, who apparently could implant orders into others.

It would have been disastrous if whoever it was, had somehow managed to implant a timebomb into Quinn. Fortunately, it appeared that all his worries had stemmed from an overactive imagination.

When the two of them exited from the lunch room, they could see that they had almost reached their destination.

Planet Humding, a dark brown planet that had hills of mud, and long plots of land with little greenery in the area. It was a harsh planet where one could sink into their footing at any moment in certain places, but if one did they wouldn't suffocate.

Instead they would fall underneath into the planet's ground, where the vast tunnels and beasts lived and worked. In one of these tunnels was a group of people.

One man had an eyepatch over his right eye and a scar beneath it. He also had another scar that went from his chin to his lip. He was dressed in a large black overcoat, but his chest was showing his chiseled abs clearly. The clothing and his style suited his long blessed torso, with his long spiked hair that would always stick up.

"Have we still not been able to capture the humanoid beast?" The man with the scars asked one of his subordinates as he impatiently tapped his right index finger against his thigh.

"Sir, we have located the beast's trail once more twelve hours ago. Unfortunately, every time we come close to cornering it, the Earthborn group gets in our way, making us lose sight of it!" The subordinate explained.

"In other words, we've failed again? Is this what our group is known for? For failing time and time again?" The eye patch man questioned and in the blink of an eye he appeared before the one who had given the report, towering over him as he looked down.

"If the Earthborn group keeps getting in our way, then we will just have to finish them off." The man declared, as he turned around. The subordinate let out a sigh of relief as he looked at his superior's black overcoat with the large Number 2 stitched on it.

My Vampire System Chapter 1144: Evolution tiers

A medium sized ship approached the Shelter on planet Humding. Usually Shelters would be built on flat ground, in a square type shape with walls on all sides. Soldiers, Mechs or Travellers would be stationed on top of them to protect those inside.

On the other hand, this planet's Shelter had been built on top of a large hill, or more accurately the main base was located there. There were several large tubes that had vehicles passing through them.

These would descend down the hill into different areas that had small bases of buildings and people around them. Shockingly there were no walls surrounding them like the main Shelter at the top of the hill, instead there were people protecting the entrance to these large tubes.

"Humding is a little unique for more reasons than one." Nathan explained as everyone was staring out of the window looking at the unique architecture. "Although there are beasts on the surface you have to watch out for, the greater danger comes from the countless sinking spots all over. The tubes you can see down there lead to some sinking spots the main base has discovered and deemed relatively safe since they are being cleared regularly to use them as entry points."

"Humding is rich in crystals, making it a very important place for the military. Unfortunately, the majority of beasts are also subterranean and don't like it when the military tries to mine those crystals."

Quinn remembered seeing places that were filled with the natural blue crystals, but there was one planet where he saw them more than ever. The Vampire Planet. It was even more reason to keep it a secret from the humans, especially since they were running low on the resource.

Flying past, they could see many things being transported through the tubes. Vehicles carrying such crystals, and more. The other common thing they saw were Mechs. There seemed to be more here than the standard. It looked like the machines themselves were used to mine for crystals at a faster rate than human hands could.

"Are those robots fun to pilot?" Fex asked. "It would be cool if we could try one out."

“If you want to try it out, we have some back on the Cursed ship.” Logan replied. “However, for someone like you it won’t be much help. They are mainly given to those who have weak abilities and show no promise in battle or to fulfill menial tasks such as you are seeing them do right now. If Sam hadn’t joined the Cursed faction, he might have been given one of these machines.”

Quinn had a wry smile on his face when he thought about it. It wouldn’t have just been Sam. He, Shiro, Peter. All of them would have been asked to fight against the Dalki, and without his system they would have all been considered too weak and would have had to learn to compensate by using the Mechs.

When they had reached the main Shelter on top of the brown dark mud hill, they noticed something else going on as well. Two Mechs seemed to be battling it out against each other, while wielding giant beast weapons. Surrounding them was a crowd of soldiers who continued to cheer at the top of their lungs.

“The Colonel is a bit of a mech enthusiast, so if you want to try one then he might let you.” Nathan said.

The Shelter had been made aware of their presence since Nathan had called ahead of time. They knew that the ones that were coming were part of the Cursed faction, but they had naturally not been made aware that the Cursed faction leader himself would arrive, nor that those who came were particularly close to Quinn.

Once the ship landed, there was the normal greeting that was to take place. Nathan saluted a man, who was dressed in black army uniform and had a golden badge on his side.

“I am Colonel Molitar Longblade.” The man stated, looking at the others behind Nathan, although his greeting to Nathan wasn’t as formal as to the others. Instead it was as if Longblade was just talking to his own soldiers.

‘Looks like Nathan was right. Since these guys were under Innu, it’s already great that they aren’t too openly hostile towards our Cursed faction. I’m glad Peter isn’t here.’ Quinn thought.

“While you are here, you are under my command! I run this Shelter, I make the rules for this Shelter and everyone has to obey, understand?!” The Colonel commanded.

The others looked at each other for a second. They certainly weren't used to this kind of managing style. They were actually all leaders of a faction that was of equal size, yet it wasn't something that anyone of their Cursed faction imposed.

Still, they all looked at 'Bucky' who quickly replied by saluting. "Understood, Sir!" Instead of openly challenging his authority, it was smarter to play along for now and let Nathan handle everything later. Seeing their leader act like that they all mimicked him.

According to Nathan, Longblade used to be a Head General under the old system. He had been in charge of one of the eight bases, but after they had reconstructed the system to just three Head Generals, his group got put under Innu.

After their display the Colonel seemed to be in a better mood and he personally showed them the place where they would be staying while on Humding, also providing them with information for what they needed. Walking through the Shelter, they could feel the eyes of everyone staring at them.

"Hey, aren't they from the Cursed faction who harbor those dangerous V?"

"Yeah, I recognise that girl. How can we allow such criminals to just walk out here so brazenly? Head General Innu wouldn't have attacked them for no reason."

With Quinn being disguised, the only V they could identify from the broadcast were Layla, and Fex, who therefore naturally got the brunt of angry and evil stares. The others had gotten a pass.

"We have to deal with this in that other place, and now here too?" Layla weakly complained to those near her. Their current treatment was very similar to when they had been to the Vampire World. To now suffer it in the Human World as well, did they truly not belong anywhere?

While walking around, they could see a group of soldiers who had entered the base, and were injured. They were being rushed to one of the large buildings which appeared to be their medical facility. The wounds though, didn't look like ones that were made from beasts. Some of those looked like powers and beast weapons.

'I guess it's true that Pure really is here.' Quinn thought.

"Hey do you notice something about all the soldiers here? They all have swords with them as their beast weapon." Fex whispered.

"That's because the sword is one of the best weapons out there." Longblade clarified, overhearing them from the front. "I'm a master swordsman myself, and my skills have saved me time and time and time again on the battlefield. As the one in charge of this Shelter I have been teaching everyone how to defend themselves with the best weapon."

Longblade sounded proud of that fact. Quinn certainly understood how strong a great master swordsman could be, but he also thought of somebody who could probably put all of the people here to shame.

"On an individual basis or preference that's fine, but don't you think that's a bit stupid for a battle or war?" Logan, in his usually charming manner, questioned him. "It helps to have a variety of beast weapon users. What happens if your opponent can fly and attack from the sky? What about support from your ranged users, and protection from each other when fighting in a group?"

"There is a reason why there are multiple weapons in the first place."

Suddenly, Longblade stopped and turned around. "Oh really? Then what beast weapon does someone so scrawny as you use? Talk is cheap, so any of you can challenge me to a battle of the sword and I would be happy to demonstrate which weapon is better."

Out of the current members of the Cursed group, none were sword users or had beast weapons in the same style as it was being used here.

"Say, Molitar, could you give us more information on this humanoid beast that has been spotted? How did you come to find it, and why haven't you been able to defeat or capture it?" Nathan asked, trying to break the just created tension.

"Have you ever hunted underground? It's completely different terrain and the beast is smart enough to be able to use it to its advantage. It's easy enough to track it at any time we wish, though. It leaves

behind a certain trail." Longblade answered. "Wherever it goes, it leaves behind dead beasts and all of them have one thing in common. The humanoid beast has killed them in one strike by targeting where their beast crystals were."

The others were in shock. Was the Colonel claiming that a beast was killing other beasts and taking just their crystals?

"It doesn't seem to care that this makes it easy to find. Although it hasn't confronted us, it also doesn't seem to be too afraid of us. We have already made a plan to capture it, by using that arrogance."

'Quinn, did you know that there are some beasts that are able to evolve?' Vincent asked. 'It's only natural for beasts to kill those who enter their territory, but they usually don't consume the crystals. Beasts seem to know about their own limits in evolution. However, if this one actually hunts other beasts for their crystals, it can only mean that it's capable of evolving further and going up in tier.'

'Are you telling me, the humanoid Demi-god tier beast is killing other beasts because it's trying to evolve into a Demon tier beast?!'

If that was true, the simple task was getting more complicated.

My Vampire System Chapter 1145: The fear of the V

Colonel Longblade continued to inform them about the annoyance the humanoid Demi-god beast posed. Although it wouldn't outright confront them, every so often, when they tried to mine, it would come and stop their mining process by destroying the Mechs. It was apparently utilising guerilla tactics and would disappear as soon as it had finished its tasks.

Because of this, Longblade had taken an interest in taking down this Demi-god beast, and it was what had led to the discovery of the dead beast bodies. Following its trails had eventually led them to certain previously unexplored areas in the tunnels where they had found a mountain of dead bodies, all at different stages of decay, but none of which had a beast crystal.

Making things even worse for the military was the fact that members of Pure had recently gotten involved. It had devolved into a battle between three fronts, which had made capturing the beast nearly impossible. Whenever they had gotten close, Pure would foil their plan, although the same had happened vice versa too.

After listening to everything, they arrived outside the main base building, which was placed towards the back of the camp. It was a dull looking rectangular building that was focused entirely on pragmatism over aesthetics. The Shelter was very much like a military base compared to others which felt more like cities with military presence.

There was a lot of open ground, vehicles moving, and it was well organised. Turning around, the Colonel looked over his reinforcement. He checked each one up and down, analysing their equipment. In Bucky's case, he spent only a fraction of a second.

He came to the conclusion that it would be a waste of his breath to even say anything to them. It looked like the Cursed faction had mostly sent over some peons. Perhaps as some stunt to influence public opinion, they had sent two people who were known V, but they didn't seem too strong either.

"Due to everything I have told you so far, that is why our group is suffering from a crystal crisis. We are unable to mine for crystals because the Demi-god tier keeps attacking us when we do. We are unable to hunt for beasts because four out of five we do find, are already dead."

"The key to solving this problem is simple, we need to get rid of the Demi-god tier beast. Unfortunately, we can't do that because Pure keeps on getting involved. I called for help from headquarters to get someone to occupy them long enough to capture it. I just didn't expect them to call the Cursed faction." Longblade looked at Nathan as if this was all his fault.

The truth was, Logan already had access to most of their files, so once the report had been made, the Cursed faction had been made aware of the existence of a humanoid Demi-god tier beast.

"Nathan should know where the living barracks are, the bases are set up in a similar way and most of the people here already recognise him. Make yourself at home as much as you can for now. We will move out, and inform you when the Demi-god tier beast has been found." Longblade said. And he was already walking into the building.

Originally, Longblade was meant to show them where they would be staying, but instead, he had brushed this off seemingly to Nathan.

“Huh, so they aren’t just going to let us go out and explore this place on our own?” Fex complained. “I thought we were going to go into those tunnels and explore underground or something searching for the beast. Damn it, would they still treat us like this if er...Quinn was here?”

“I’m afraid so, actually their treatment would very likely be even worse,” Nathan answered. “The good news is that the Colonel doesn’t think you guys will be able to be of any help, so he hasn’t imposed any restrictions on you. If he thought you were too strong or good, then maybe he wouldn’t want you to solve the problem. It would look bad on them after all.”

“Although those living in the Shelter idolise the late Head General Innu, the same can’t be said about the other Generals. Although he shouldn’t know about Oscar yet, Longblade surely knows about Innu, and must be hoping to rack up accomplishments to rise up the ladder.”

“What about you?” Logan asked. “Aren’t you a high ranking member as well?”

“I have no right to be a leader.” Nathan smiled bitterly, looking at Quinn. “Just take a look at my history. Back at second base, I was in charge of the first-year students. I knew something was up, but I had no idea that everyone was being treated that badly.”

“Even then, I couldn’t stand up to Duke for what he was doing. I had been hoping to rely on Paul, until a certain individual came and defeated him. I couldn’t do a good job back then, so how could I accept to do a better job in an even higher position with even more responsibility?”

“I tell you now ‘Bucky’, I don’t envy your position, not at all.”

Heading to the sleeping barracks, Nathan was to show them where they would be staying. So they could then all go off and do their own thing. The others didn’t mind that much because they were sure that there was a chance that Quinn was going to act behind the scenes anyway, and that was what was currently on his mind as well.

'Vincent, if you're correct, then we need to act sooner rather than later. If it evolves, who knows just how powerful it can get?'

Speaking of beasts, on their tour they had encountered several captured beasts of all different shapes and sizes being carted around in special cages. Some of them had been asleep, most likely drugged, while others were banging against them trying to escape, and they were all heading to a certain place. A facility where there were a few men standing outside in lab coats inspecting the beast with special tools and such.

"What is that for?" Layla asked.

"I'm not entirely sure. It's not normal by any means for beasts to be inside a Shelter. This is usually considered a large risk." Nathan replied.

With it getting late, it was time for the others to get some sleep. When they entered the barracks, they realised it was just a large hangar with several beds lying on the floor. Soldiers were sleeping together side by side, and it was obvious that they weren't being treated as important guests at all.

From the right, suddenly Fex started to sniff the air. He immediately turned his head to where the smell was coming from.

"Is someone hurt?" He thought, but instead, all he could see was a person who was a couple of rows over from where they were with a blade in his hand. He had cut the palm of his hand with a beast weapon, and was smiling towards them.

"Did you see that? He could tell straight away? I guess it's true they really are sensitive to blood."

"And we're meant to sleep with these people. General Innu sacrificed his life to take out these guys, and we should be doing the same!"

Due to their sensitive hearing, they could hear all that was being said to them as well.

“Do you really think it will be safe if we stay here?” Layla asked. “What if they attempt to do something?”

“I don’t think they will have done anything. If they did plan on it, they would have done it when we first arrived like General Innu did.” Quinn replied.

The smell of blood was getting stronger in the sleeping area. Which was strange since the injured would stay at the hospital to be treated. There shouldn’t be any open wounds either because they had healers.

That’s when Quinn noticed that more and more people were playing tricks on them. Cutting themselves. It was a strange resolve, it took a lot for a person to cut themselves, especially due to something as petty as this, but it was the fear in them. They were doing it as some type of test that would make them feel better.

*Grurglel

A rumbling noise had come from one of the group, and the one it happens to be from, was Fex. His body was reacting to the sweet smell of the blood around him, whether he liked it or not, and the looks of everyone around them was filled with fear.

‘What’s going to happen now?’ Layla thought.

My Vampire System Chapter 1146: Inspect skill secre

“Yeah, now of all times, you know what, if I put a bunch of freshly baked cakes in front of you, wouldn’t your stomach rumble? We practically starve ourselves every day to get used to this empty feeling.” Fex said.

When Fex spoke, he was speaking quite loudly due to his anger. Layla was trying to get him to shut up, as there was a horrid look on the faces of the soldiers closest to them, to the point where they had their fingers twiddling over their blades.

“Hey, just leave some cake for the others, okay?” Quinn said, smiling at Fex. If they were going to be scared anyway, they might as well have a little fun with it.

Because of all the stares they were getting from the others, Fex, who didn't need much sleep, had agreed he would keep an eye out for them while the others could get some shut-eye. Then in the middle of the night, Quinn wanted to do some investigating on what he had seen earlier. He was planning to see just what they were doing with all those beasts in that lab.

[Shadow cloak activated]

Quinn activated Shadow cloak, making it easy for him to escape and get out without anyone noticing him. It was the same for entering the facility. All he had to do was enter when someone else was walking inside or coming out, and that didn't take long at all, as a beast was being carted and dragged by three men through the facility.

Following where they were taking the beast, eventually they arrived in a room, where a man in a white robe and heavy grey beard and hair had a digital tablet in his hand.

“This is the last one for today, Sir!” One of the soldiers reported and quickly left the room after.

The doctor went up to the beast in the cage, which looked like a giant dog the size of a tiger with bulging muscles and fur going along the top of its head all the way to its back. According to his Inspect skill, it was an Intermediate tier beast.

Quinn followed the researcher to the corner of the lab, where there was another beast. It also had the appearance of a dog, but it was half the size of the first one. It looked similar yet at the same time different. Using the Inspect skill he was told that this one was apparently a Basic tier beast.

“Let's hope it works this time.” The old man mumbled to himself, as he started to play with his two fingers, and hovered around the right spot closing one of his eyes as if he was aiming something. A second later and all of his fingers extending outward, piercing right through the Intermediate tier beast. Turning his hand left and right, the old man yanked his arm and held a beast crystal in his hand.

“Studying to see if the Crystals freshness affects the beast in any way.” The old man spoke into a recording machine, as he went over to the Basic tier beast. As he got closer, the beast started to act more violent and wild, growling and attacking his case.

‘Do beasts eat crystals then?’ Quinn wondered while looking at this site. It seemed obvious that the doctor was attempting to feed the Intermediate crystal to the smaller beast. Perhaps it was trying to do the very thing that Vincent had talked about with the Demi-god tier beast.

Seeing that the beast wasn’t inclined to eat the crystal, the doctor then started to close one eye aiming again for a certain spot. Then his fingers extended again, placing the crystal in a certain area that looked to be where the beast stomach would be.

After exiting from the beast with his fingers, the doctor had stitched up the beast using his long fingers. Even when the beast would try to hit them, they would stay there strong as if a baby was trying to whack away an adult’s hand.

“It appears that despite the difference in tiers, a single crystal of a higher tier beast is insufficient to force an immediate evolution in the lower tier beast. The Basic tier beast will be put under surveillance for the next forty-eight hours, to check for any changes indicating a possible evolution.”

“Should there be no signs of evolution, the experiment will be repeated to see how many crystals are required for an evolution to occur. Personal thoughts; As of now it does not seem practical to use higher tier crystals for lower tier beasts. Using the crystals of the same grade might mean the process will take longer, but could be more cost effective.” The researcher recorded his findings, before he yawned.

Soon after, the researcher left the lab, leaving Quinn alone with the Basic tier beast.

‘Pure, Earthborn, it’s like everyone is running their own experiments. Some people might even think the Cursed faction are doing the same with vampires the way things are going on.’ Quinn thought.

He searched the room for anything of use, but it seemed like most of the information was stored on computers and more. It would have been more useful if Logan had been here instead of him.

Then there was the basic tier beast lying on its side and looked in great pain as it moaned there. It looked sick, unable to move, and only its belly was moving up and down.

'Maybe I should use my inspect skill again, it will tell me what state it's in.' Quinn thought.

[Inspect]

[Basic tier beast]

[Condition weak]

[Evolution available]

[Current progress 48 percent]

'The Inspect skill, it actually worked like that! This means that it's true that beasts can consume other crystals in order to evolve, but I have no clue how many crystals they used. Even with the intermediate tier crystal, it didn't evolve. But then why didn't it show its progression the first time. Is it only after consuming the crystal and while it's in this state that it's being affected like so?

When first entering, Quinn had used his inspect skill on both of them. Both of the beast's states were green in colour and in good condition. Now the beast was in a weak state.

Quinn looked around and pressed his ear up against the wall. It didn't sound like anyone would be coming back soon, and the doctor even seemed to be done for the day. Because of this, he decided it was best if he just observed the beast for a little while.

In doing so, he had learnt quite a few things. For one, the beast evolution progress wasn't yet complete as the percentage bar had increased during his observation. It had reached 52 percent. Then something strange happened.

Quinn could no longer see the percentage of the beast's evolution when using his inspect skill again. Not only that, but the beast was now also recovering until eventually, its state was good again.

'This information, it could be really useful for us when trying to catch the Demi-god tier beast. If it really is trying to evolve, then it also means it's not consuming the crystal immediately. Because during the evolution process, the beast appears to go into a weak state, but Longblade must already know this.

'Is this what he meant when he said he had a plan to trap the beast.

It seemed like this lab of sorts was filled with vital information. It wasn't something that they had suddenly started to do overnight. Now he really wishes that he had brought Logan along, because there could have been heaps of information they could have learnt from this.'

Still trying to search for something, anything, he did come across something else.

Eventually, he saw a familiar device. It was circular in shape, with three buttons on the side, another recording device. Pressing one of the buttons, Quinn played back the latest message that had been recorded.

"Why do you people keep on killing us? This is not your planet! If you carry on, this whole planet will cease to exist! Go back, or I will make you stop!" Quinn heard the voice, only it didn't sound exactly...human.

My Vampire System Chapter 1147: Giant Robots

Just to make sure he had heard correctly, Quinn played the recording back a couple of times. The voice was distinct, deep dark and a bit heavy. It was as if the one speaking wasn't quite used to the act. In a way it sounded similar to the way the Dalki would speak, yet this voice had a different tone to it.

'Is this a recording of the Demi-god tier beast?' Quinn wondered. It was the only thing he could guess since he was still unable to access files or any information on the terminals, nor did he have much experience with the higher tier beasts.

After all, it wasn't that long ago that he became able to defeat them and that kind of information should only be spread among those that had already reached such a level. Still, he had once heard about a Demon tier humanoid beast that had been capable of speaking the human language. Quinn might not have believed such a thing, if the one who had told him wouldn't have been Oscar.

'If a humanoid Demon tier beast is able to communicate, then it might be safe to assume that an evolving Demi-god tier beast can do the same.' Quinn justified the recording. 'But what about that message? It sounds like we are the bad guys here.'

Beasts were known as aggressive beings. They would attack anyone who would enter their territory, be they fellow beast or human. However, this one sounded sad and angry at the loss of its fellow beasts. What's even more interesting was that it hadn't outright attacked them, but had apparently given the Earthborn group an ultimatum.

'Are humanoid beasts that different due to their intelligence? It wasn't just worrying about the other beasts, but about this planet as a whole.' Thinking back at what Colonel Longblade had said, he mentioned that the Demi-god tier beast would come and go, destroying the Mechs and equipment. It didn't outright kill humans and even the beasts it hunted had been killed in one fell swoop.

Could it be that it was its version of kindness?

It was certainly something for Quinn to think about. He then spent some more time watching the Basic tier go through its evolution process, before Quinn decided it was time to finally leave the place. He was sure today wouldn't be the last time he would come visit this lab either. Only next time, he might bring Logan along.

Getting out of the building was no problem at all thanks to Shadow travel. The ability allowed him to pass through walls. He had followed the beast in the cage to find out where exactly it was going in the first place. Once out of the building with Shadow cloak he could go back to the sleeping quarters without them ever realising he was gone.

"Was there any trouble?" Quinn asked, as he appeared behind Fex.

“Damn it, wh-!” Fex was about to shout as jumped up from his position, but Quinn had barely covered the other’s mouth. He only removed it once his friend had seemingly calmed down, realising who he was.

“Did you have to sneak up on me like that?” Fex angrily asked.

“I was sure you would have sensed me coming.” Quinn explained, since even some humans could detect him when using Shadow cloak, much less a vampire of Fex’ caliber.

“Yeah, well I’m tired. The air here is horrible and our roommates aren’t much better. There were a couple of guys who kept on coming over, pretending to have some business here. In the end I got pissed and used my Influence skill to make them stop. Don’t worry, it doesn’t seem like they’ve noticed anything, but unless we teach them a lesson or two, more will come to bother us.”

“Are you sure, we can’t just give one of them a crude beating, set it as an example to not mess with us. That’s how a vampire would do it?” Fex suggested.

“That might be the vampire way, but we aren’t in the Vampire World, now are we? I don’t want to rule these people through fear. The people are divided, because we dropped a bomb on them. It might be inconvenient for us, but we need to earn their trust again and beating up some random nobodies won’t really help us with that.” Quinn disagreed. Fex didn’t look quite convinced, but at least Quinn was sure the other vampire wouldn’t look for trouble either.

The next morning the sun rose, and the first thing the soldiers did once they woke up was to check their necks. Each one was loudly announcing that they were ‘safe’. What’s more they even did a headcount to check if any of them had gone missing. Of course this was all due to the new visitors there. When they looked over at them, Fex who had already been annoyed couldn’t help but shout: “I might be hungry, but I still have STANDARDS!”

This resulted in some strong gazes, but ultimately nothing else came of it. They started to leave the area and do their own thing while the Cursed group could do nothing but wait. Quinn informed Logan about the lab and told him that he should come along, but the best time would be at night fall again.

With nothing else to do, their group walked around together and they were quickly drawn to the sound of loud cheers coming from a certain place. Loud bangs followed and the sound of something heavy was heard crashing to the floor.

Breaking off from the group, Fex was the first to run around the corner, searching for the origin, and the next moment he stood there with his eyes lighting up and shining stars.

“Hey, there’s a freaking giant robot fight happening here! Come on!” Fex enthusiastically shouted. There were just some things that a vampire couldn’t experience in the Vampire World, and this was one of them.

When the group caught up to Fex they could see it as well. It was a repeat of what they had seen from above in the ship. However now they were closer they could see things that they hadn’t been able to before.

There were makeshift stands where the soldiers stood and cheered for the fighters. It looked like it had been made via the Earth ability, but then in the centre, there was terrain unlike anything on the planet itself.

A large square field the same size as a soccer field was present, yet there was a strange forest in place there. That was the arena for the fight. They would use the trees for cover while firing at each other, dashing and running through, then when they were within close range, all the Mechs seemed to be equipped with a giant sword.

“Wait, what’s with those capsules at the end, don’t they look like the VR capsules?” Layla pointed out.

At either end of the giant battle there were two pods stationed, and they looked exactly like the one Quinn would often use to play power fighters.

“That’s because they are.” Logan clarified. “What you’re looking at right now is an augmented reality field. The terrain they are fighting on, the Mechs themselves, it’s all generated by holograms. Even the sounds and the vibration you are feeling are simulated.”

“There are two people in the VR capsules who are controlling the Mechs. It also allows them to train and practice in as many different terrains as they wish.”

“How do you know all of this?” Fex asked.

“Because my company is the one that sells these products and I was the one who helped develop them. It’s expensive to use actual Mechs in combat. Could you imagine how much that would cost? This is the perfect way for them to experience all the different types of terrain outside the live situation.”

“The added benefit is not every person has to be in the VR capsule to watch or experience what is going on, they can all watch, coach and give each other tips on the go. It’s too expensive for consumer use, so it’s no wonder we haven’t seen one until now.” Logan explained.

Entering the crowd, the Cursed group were interested in getting a closer look. They were allowed through and as they walked through the stands it didn’t come as a surprise when people started to notice them.

The cheering turned to stares and grunts, as they whispered hoping that they wouldn’t choose a seat next to theirs.

“Let’s just stand by the railing.” Quinn suggested, as they went to the seats that were closest to the area where the show was going on, and were able to just stand and watch.

As they were watching Fex started to imitate the robots, as he imagined polishing one of the things, and the others around found it quite hilarious as they giggled.

“He’s like a child, has he never piloted one of those things before?”

“I doubt the V have such advanced techs as mechs? And the Cursed probably don’t train there now in things like this.” Another said.

Although Fex chose to ignore it and started to root for one of the other members.

“What are you doing, you should dodge to the left, and then slice that other one in half.”

Fex’s comments were starting to annoy some of the nearby soldiers, as it sounded like he could have done a better job and in the end, the one Fex was rooting for along with many others in the crowd had lost.

“What the hell was that guy doing!” Fex complained with his hands held over his head.

“Shut your mouth you brat!” One of the soldiers shouted. “I don’t think you have any idea how to even pilot one of those things! You would lose to any one of us, so unless you want to put your words into action then zip it!”

Quinn didn’t like the way this person was speaking to one of his friends. His anger was boiling at this moment, but Fex’s reaction was unexpected.

“You mean you’ll really let me pilot one of these?!” Fex asked with a giant grin.

They didn’t know how, but somehow Fex got pushed to the front of the waiting participants and was ready to head into the VR capsule to have his first match.

“Do you think he’ll be okay?” Layla asked.

“I have no idea.” Quinn shrugged his shoulders.

The ones in the crowd were cheering as they recognised the person standing next to the other VR capsule. It was Avion Bon, the best Mech pilot they had.

“That kid is in for a world of hurt!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1148: The vampire boy’s dream!

The two of them entered the VR capsules and soon Fex watched a digital version of himself being created on the same field. As he turned around he could see the VR capsule behind him, his opponent standing on the opposite side of the field and everyone in the crowd including Quinn and the others.

It was as if a digital version of his body had gone outside. Soon the AR field started to generate new terrain. An orange dry desert with several large cannon openings and closings.

Then finally, the large mechs had been generated. Fex' design had a slight red armour while his opponent's was in blue. Fex excitedly leaped to the cockpit with no trouble and entered immediately.

"Did he just casually jump that high? It doesn't even look like he's wearing much beast gear?" The soldiers were wondering whether they were seeing things.

It was a grim reminder that Fex wasn't exactly human.

Although Fex wore some beast gear at times, more often than not he would follow vampire tradition and forgo using it. It seemed to be ingrained in their mentality that the strongest weapon would be their own body. Using his powers would allow him to advance his blood control and skills without relying on equipment. Then if there was ever truly the need to use beast gear he would be even stronger than at his best.

Compared to Fex, Avion used the Mech's legs to climb up to the cockpit that was located in the Mech's chest area. Once inside, there was room for one to fully move their body. The Mechs that the VR machine were simulating were both top of the line.

In the past, one would have to learn multiple controls, and the ins and outs of each button, but these days the interface was a lot easier to use. As long as one put on a certain set of gloves and boots, they would be able to control it similar to their own bodies.

On the gloves themselves there were several buttons one could press and each one did something different. This was one thing every Mech user would have to learn, so Fex naturally had no clue what they did at all.

“Fex will struggle.” Logan stated as he stood on the outside observing. “At least at the beginning stages he will have to get used to this new experience. Not only does he need to figure out what the controls exactly do, but he will have to familiarise himself with the Mech’s response time.”

“Every Mech has a delay between one’s movements and the machine itself. The soldiers train to the point where this delay doesn’t really matter to them. A skilled Mech user is someone who is able to predict the others’ movements in battle and is able to react accordingly.”

“Not only will Fex struggle with it, as a vampire his reaction speed is superior to a human’s. The normal delay should feel like an entirety to him.”

For once it sounded like being a vampire was actually a disadvantage rather than an advantage.

With both fighters having entered their respective Mechs, a holographic countdown started at ten .

“Alright, let’s do this!” Fex shouted.

When the countdown finished, the first thing Fex did was press one of the buttons on his left glove. An energy blast left the palm of his hand hitting the ground.

“Okay that’s what that one does.” Pressing the next button, Fex mech suddenly had a blade in its hand, and now in the cockpit there was a holographic blade as well.

“So cool, this is why we need to keep humans alive?” Fex giggled to himself, as he swung the sword about, moving his hands at great speed, and that’s when he noticed it. The Mech was moving far slower than he had expected. Inside the cockpit Fex had moved at his vampire natural speed, he had even finished his set of movements, and then the Mech emulated them later.

“Oh crap!”

While Fex was still trying to figure out the Mech, Avion was already on the move. He was no longer at his starting position. Seeing that Fex had moved the giant machine to a position where he could find cover, standing behind one of the large orange walls.

'Damn it, I can only hear what the giant robot hears! So I can't locate where he is.' Years of fighting with his supersenses it was hard to break the habit.

Taking a peak around the corner, for a split second Fex could see his opponent firing his way. He pulled back his head, but naturally, he hadn't accounted for the delay yet, so the energy blast sent his giant robot flying through the air.

Moments later, he could see the blue Mech having jumped towards him with a blade in his hand.

Lifting his hands up, Fex tried to blast his opponent in the air. He was sure that the other would be unable to move mid-air, but using a thrust, Avion was easily able to avoid it all.

"Poor kid, I thought that your enthusiasm stemmed from being confident. Here I was looking forward to you showing me a good time, but I guess not!" Avion shouted, as he thrust his sword down.

Knowing what was going to happen, Fex had already pulled out his blade though, and swiped. He was slowly getting used to the delay, or so he had thought. His sword swung to the side, but the only thing it hit was air. The next moment Avion fell down and his sword pierced the centre of the cockpit.

The fight was over, the VR capsules opened up and a disappointed Fex left it.

"Hahaha, see boy, it's not so easy, is it?! You didn't even get a single hit on him?" One of the soldiers shouted in glee. "If all the people in the Cursed faction are this useless, maybe we don't have to worry about the V after all!"

However, Avion didn't share that opinion. His thoughts were still on the last move of their fight.

'He would have hit me, if he had reacted a moment later. Was this coincidence, or did he know what he was doing?'

The crowd's laughter and mocking continued at Fex' expense as the vampire made his way back to his friends and colleagues. Since he didn't react some of the rowdier soldiers started chugging items at him. However, Fex just moved his head slightly to avoid the water bottle. Soon a few more came, but he avoided them all.

No matter what or how many items were thrown at him, Fex didn't even break into a sweat, but eventually he grabbed one of them midair.

"I may be useless in the giant robot, but I could beat you all in a fight anyday!" Fex shouted back, clenching the water bottle and bursting it into pieces.

At that moment, the VR machine had activated again creating a new field. This time it was the same forest that they had seen before. This would only happen when someone had entered the VR capsule, but who would do such a thing?

Until the other person entered the VR capsule, they wouldn't see who had exactly entered on both sides, and they were wondering just what to do.

"Why didn't you stop him?" Shiro asked. "You saw what happened to Fex. Do you think this would be any different?"

"Of course it will." Quinn replied leisurely.

At that moment Fex had returned and he noticed that one of them was missing.

He wasn't the only one, the soldiers as well as Avion noticed the same. Quickly his peers were cheering for their best pilot to teach them another lesson.

The pilot had no problem with that. He turned around and entered into the capsule, and the soldiers began to cheer him on even louder than before. Finally the machines started to do its thing as it created digital copies of the two of them.

That's when the whole crowd could see what looked like a middle school boy out on the field.

"It might be a different story for anyone else, but how can Logan lose when it comes to a fight in machines?"

My Vampire System Chapter 1149: Is he Cheating?

'I hope the soldiers went easy on the Cursed group. I don't need any of their blood on my hands right now. Not unless we are underground and there is plausible deniability at least.' Colonel Longblade thought as he left his office in the main base Shelter in the morning to enjoy the nice day.

'Besides, I should even thank them for getting rid of Innu. I always knew his own incompetence would be the end of him one day, just never thought it would be like this. It's a bit strange that they still haven't made an announcement about it yet. Could there be something else going on? Although it doesn't matter since news has already spread around this base.'

Until his scout teams returned from the tunnels to report back there was not much else to do for the military leader, so he decided to visit a certain place. One of his favourite pastimes was to head down to the AR field.

As soon as he arrived, the soldiers immediately saluted their superior and let him through to the special seating area reserved for him. It was located midway down the stands and the seat had a special red cloth with a gold outline placed on them, similar to a makeshift throne.

The surrounding seats were also free, because they all knew who the main seat belonged to, Colonel Longblade, the Mech enthusiast who spent most of his days watching battle after battle whenever he wasn't leading any expeditions or teaching swordsmanship.

“Oh, how come Avion is down there? Did he change his mind or did one of our soldiers actually grow competent enough to be worthy of him participating again?” Longblade asked one of his favourite subordinates.

“Negative, Sir. One of the Cursed faction members has been complaining about the performance of one of our pilots, so we invited him out to the field to teach him a lesson. Due to the disrespect that was being shown we requested Avion to show off the difference between both our factions! As expected he defeated his opener swiftly!”

The man who had answered him, stood to his left, with another one to his right. These two were in charge of the AR matches which was why they knew all of the details of what was going on and they had also been the ones that pushed Fex up the list.

“That makes sense, but why did Avion just climb back into the capsule?” Longblade questioned.

The two men quickly looked at each other with worry, and finally the one to the Colonel’s right then broke the news.

“Another person from the Cursed faction has entered one of the capsules, although we have no idea how he was able to access the machine or start the match without our approval. Perhaps there is a malfunction, in any case we have already reported this problem. Nevertheless, there does not seem to be any problem with the actual equipment itself, so it should be more likely a software issue. Now that Avion has entered again, another match looks like it will soon begin.” The man explained.

They half expected for Longblade to be upset, but instead he had a smile on his face. The only thing he was upset about was the fact that he hadn’t arrived earlier to have watched their best pilot school a member of the Cursed faction.

“At least I will get to witness something fun today. It’s not everyday that we witness someone as skilled as Avion fighting. It is a shame that he has no talent with abilities, so his skills aren’t so great outside the Mech, but inside the machine he is a combat genius. Someone like him can only truly be appreciated here.” Longblade mused.

The countdown for the match was about to begin, as Logan and Avion both got into their mechs. There were those that were supporting Logan who were a little nervous. While the soldiers had no worry at all.

They thought the small child must have just gotten out of school. Piloting the mech required a great deal of physical strength as well, as one would get hit and injured. Stopping suddenly and moving about one would have to take the massive amounts of g-force that went with it.

Which was why they just couldn't imagine someone like Logan fairing well.

"Doesn't it take a lot of skill to pilot a mech?" Shiro asked. "I mean, I know Logan is great with technology but you have to know how to fight in them."

"That shouldn't be any problem." Quinn replied confidently. "Logan has his own unique ways of dealing with things sometimes. Don't forget he's a man of probability, so he wouldn't have gotten in that Mech if he wasn't convinced he could beat the other guy and get some revenge for Fex."

The match began and immediately the two of them started to run forward with their Mechs. Both of them dodged in and out of the trees.

'Now what would be the best method to crush someone of his caliber?' Logan deliberated. 'Should I beat him in a skill competition? With my ability I could ask the Mech to battle on its own, but he should be too skilled to be easily beaten. Which means there is only one sure way to win.'

So far the movements from either side had been cautious. There had been a few shots of energy blasts fired here and there, but the only targets hit had been the trees.

'This person's movement is a lot better than the last one.' Avion judged. 'But, when it comes to combat, no one is better than me.'

Just then, the Earthborn pilot spotted Logan running towards him with his Mech. It was a direct path where trees weren't going to help any time soon.

'Got you.' Avion thought as he raised his hand, and was ready to fire out a blast, but then something strange had occurred. His hand lit up, but it felt like something was off.

'Shouldn't it have fired by now?' Avion was confused. He knew Mech's better than anyone else from his peers. It should be impossible for him to make such an amateur mistake as to misjudge the timing.

Before he knew it, Logan's Mech had dashed forward and was directly in front of him, knocking the hand away so the resulting blast fired off, hitting just a branch in one of the trees. Next a leg was coming to kick it's body, but Avion was prepared for this. He was ready to use his thrusters to reposition himself.

However, once again, his timing was off, allowing Logan's kick to connect and damage the outer hull.

"What's going on? Avion's getting slaughtered out there!"

"Did you see how fast that Mech moved? Since then do thrusters activate that fast?"

Although It was unnoticeable for those in the crowd, it wasn't unnoticeable to Avion's mind and body. He had practised in the Mech to perfect the timing to the point where he felt like his body was actually in sync with the Mech was suffering because it was currently out of sync.

'The one sure way to beat you...' Logan thought as he lifted out both his hands, they started to light up. Getting off the ground, Avion quickly moved his Mech behind a large tree to take cover. '... is to use my powers.'

With that he shot out a blast with both of his hands, aiming right for the tree. Of course. Avion had played the game 1000's of times so he knew that this tree would be able to block the energy blasts. When it hit, the tree broke and the blast hit Avion' Mech right in the chest.

'What, but that's impossible, the tree should have blocked the hit!'

However, the attack hadn't stopped there as it started melting through the metal and eventually the notification screen was seen ending the match right there and then.

"What just happened? I've never seen anyone do that with an energy blast before! Did he finish the person off with just one enemy blast attack? Is that really possible?"

“I’ve seen Mechs get hit countless times by blasts. Even in the chest but it’s never ended the match like that, but it has to be something the game is cable off. PErhaps there are things we don’t even know about them?”

What they didn’t realise was that Logan Green was the creator of the game. With his powers he was able to do whatever he wished. If he wanted to modify the thrusters and grant them a quicker launch time, then he could. If he wanted to amplify the power of his blast then that was no problem as well.

Lastly, if he wanted to alter his opponents Mech, he could do that as well.

“Did Avion just lose? I never thought I would see something like that, and the other guy didn’t even seem like he was trying that hard!”

“Who is that kid? Could it be that the Cursed faction had some legendary pilot we never heard of before in their midst?”

The crowd was left stunned, as they never expected the match to have one that way.

‘At the end of the day, this is just a game and we do everything we can to win. In the real world it will be the same.’ Logan thought to himself, as he left the VR capsule.

‘I think that last move made it a little too obvious that you didn’t really play fair.’ Quinn was slightly worried.

Standing up from the crowd was Longblade. As the Mech enthusiast he was, he knew exactly what those machines should and shouldn’t be able to do. He had never heard of such functions. Walking down from the stage, the military leader entered the arena, before Logan could leave, and now the two of them stood in front of each other.

“Do you really think you could fool me?” Longblade asked. “Why don’t we see if you can do that same trick again, but in a real battle?”

He had his hand ready to pull out his sword, yet it was more of a threat since he never expected Logan to accept in the first place. When trying to pull it out to further intimidate, it felt like it was stuck.

Turning around, he could see an insignificant young man. He had seemingly appeared out of nowhere on the arena floor, and held the sword's shaft from behind.

"I'm sorry but I don't like it when people draw a weapon on my friends."

My Vampire System Chapter 1150: Bucky steps up

Although Colonel Longblade wasn't using his full strength to draw out his sword, he still found it strange that someone was able to stop him by just using their bare hands.

'I don't see any beast gear on him, but he must be holding the scabbard hard enough to cause it to flex inward, trapping the sword itself. Is that even possible with a human's strength? Could it be that he has an ability to increase his strength?' Longblade wondered as he seized up the stranger.

Someone with this kind of strength and skill should be known far and wide by now. Information on the Cursed faction wasn't widely available for anyone outside their faction. Still, Head General Innu had recently conducted a special meeting for high-ranking officers, so they would ingrain certain prominent members. Looking at this person, Longblade was unable to associate him with any of them.

'No, it's my fault for judging him with human standards when this person is from the Cursed faction. We already know that some of their members are V, but there was no reason for them to give us a full list. For once I agree with Innu's approach, it might be safer to assume that every single one of them is a V.' The Colonel concluded and intended to reevaluate the other members at a later point in time as well.

With neither one of them budging, the military leader released the grip on his hilt.

"What's your name again?" He asked.

“It’s Bucky, Sir. Our Cursed faction’s higher-ups have tasked me to make sure that not a single member of our group is hurt. At least not by fellow allies.” Quinn smiled as he explained. It was impossible to pretend to be a nobody at this point, so going with the flow he had decided to appear as some sort of trump card.

Hearing this, Longblade started to laugh and looked over the winner of the last match. Staring at the metal plate covering one of his arms. It wasn’t unusual in this day and age for people to replace their bodies with robotic parts, but then he noticed something.

“Now that I can take a closer look, I should have realised my mistake. We were told that the Green family was working for the Cursed faction, I just never expected them to actually come out on the field. Forgive me for being so rude earlier.” Longblade apologised with a gentle bow.

The whole crowd started to gossip between each other as they heard the name ‘Green family’. Although not a part of the previous Big Four their influence hadn’t been too far off, by creating a number of systems for the world.

The only thing was, not many people knew that Logan worked on more of the game-like projects compared to the ones his parents worked on. Be it as the creator or with his ability, he had no problem to change it into the way he wished.

“However, that only strengthens my belief that there was foul play involved!” Longblade stated, intending to stir something up. Now that Quinn was on the field though, Logan no longer had anything to worry about, and he just walked past Longblade.

“As a military man you should be aware that a win is a win. It doesn’t matter if one defeats their enemy through an ‘honorable’ one-on-one fight, teams up on the enemy, or utilises traps. A loss in the real world means death. I would love to see people making excuses like that when they are dead.” Logan declared, as he continued to walk off.

After learning of who Logan was, there wasn’t a doubt in people’s mind that he had somehow cheated. Avion had already felt that something was off, but with this knowledge he was certain that he had been cheated.

“I want a rematch!” Avion demanded. “Let’s use real Mechs and fight again! I have practically dedicated my life to these machines, so it’s impossible for me to misjudge the timing if you hadn’t messed with it!”

“Stand down.” Longblade ordered the pilot. “Do you really think there will be much of a difference in a real match? If he can alter the game system, he must be able to alter any system. It might hurt your pride but I won’t permit you to risk your life in such a stupid way. We still need you for the war against the Dalki!”

“He has a point, in a real fight if your Mech’s sensors got scrambled and something like this was to happen, who would you complain to?”

“Which is why I suggest something else. I’m sure you know that the game can be used in other ways. Not only can it simulate a field for Mechs to fight in, but also one for our users to fight in. Similar to the game Power Fighters. If you are up for it, we can fight again. In the real world you could do nothing to alter our fighting skills with your abilities, so hope you wouldn’t claim it was fair to do that again if you were to alter yourself and opponent in this match? What do you say?” Longblade offered.

It was a troublesome request. Of course they could just decline this little game. After all, even though Logan could fight, he wasn’t the best to go against someone who used beast weapons regularly. Even if he did use the system, the Colonel would call it out straight away as soon as he noticed something off, possibly stopping the match midway.

“Well there’s really no upside to this whole thing.” Fex complained who was still sulking in the stands. “Logan already beat that Avion guy, so there’s no need for us to play a match by their rules.”

“I do agree, but I think ‘Bucky’ might have other ideas.”

“I’ll take you up on that offer.” Quinn agreed. “We don’t want you to accuse Logan of cheating again, so he won’t participate. How about I give it a shot? After all, I am a member of the Cursed faction as well. Any objections?”

Longblade didn’t like the fact that this enigma had so willingly excluded Logan. He also didn’t like the fact that ‘Bucky’ was this confident, but he had met many foolish young people in his life, hoping he was just one of them.

“That sounds great. What better way to bring our two factions closer together than through the art of combat and coalition. Before you accept though there are a few rules.” Longblade nodded as he continued to smile, not showing his concern.

“Master Green here is to stay in the stands far away from any of the machinery. Before your fight is to take place we shall have a test run, and the game we shall play won’t exactly be the same as Power Fighters either.”

“As you have already noticed, everyone of my soldiers uses a bladed weapon. The most common one is a sword to do battle. To make it a little more fun we have altered the gaming system. Each combatant starts off with a hundred points of Health. Each blow takes off points, up to a maximum of ten if you hit a lethal spot. For a regular hit five.”

“I know in the real world, one would die from a stab to the heart or the head, but this is all for us to improve our skills. After all, there are some foes we face that don’t die even after suffering such an injury. So what do you say?”

Logan, who was still there, didn’t like it. Nobody in the present Cursed group used swords as their weapons. With all things in the Colonel’s favour, Logan expected Quinn to refuse or at least make some demands of his own.

“I’m in. Shall we start now?” Quinn asked with a smile.

It came to a surprise for most of the Cursed and they were wondering just what Quinn was up to. Leaving the field, Logan didn’t even have time to ask, but Quinn just gave him a thumbs up as he neared the stands.

“Excellent, I am very pleased we have someone who doesn’t shy away.” Longblade bellowed out as he turned and made his way to the other side of the field, yet his fake smile soon turned into a frown.

‘Is he this confident because of what he is? We have to win this fight to prove to the people that the V are something that can be dealt with. Most are afraid of the V and disgusted by them, there is only a select view that isn’t swayed by the countless rumours, that going the Cursed will turn you into a V and give you great power.’

Whether right or wrong, Longblade had his own reasons for wanting to win this fight. As stipulated, they witnessed a fight between two other soldiers take place before the main one. The field had changed once again, this time into a stony area with several large rocks and pillars all around.

The two of them used their swords and the field reacted as it would to in real life, each slash against the rocks would cut and break them, and even the attacks against each other would simulate the pain and reaction their body would feel.

The only difference was, that once the pain disappeared the wound would heal instantly. At the same time, everyone could see the health bars above go down as each opponent struck each other.

'I see. Well, it seems I've learned a lot, watching them.'

As for Quinn's reason for wanting to fight, it was actually quite childish. Similar to Fex's dream of piloting a Mech, when Quinn had first entered the military academy and joined the beast weapons class, he had originally wanted to use a sword to do battle.

The main reason he hadn't selected that weapon was due to the system informing him it wouldn't have supported his Blood swipe and other blood powers compared to the gauntlets. Now that he had extreme strength, speed, reflexes and experience under his belt, Quinn wanted to see how exactly he would fare with the weapon he had once neglected.

With the match over, Quinn's and the Colonels' match was about to begin.

"Come on Bucky, kick his arse!" Fex shouted and cheered as loud as he could. Since the whole arena was now chanting the name of Longblade. It was quite overwhelming as the loud sound was drowning out everything, and Fex even had to cover his sensitive ears.

'Quinn, good luck.' Layla thought.

"What a surprise to stumble upon an Ex agent of Pure in this place." A voice whispered behind her.

